

# GRAMMAR OF THE TIBETAN LANGUAGE

HERBERT BRUCE HANNAH

# GRAMMAR OF THE TIBETAN LANGUAGE

Literary and Colloquial

With copious Illustrations, and treating fully of Spelling, Pronunciation and the Construction of the Verb, and including

Appendices of the various forms of the Verb

HERBERT BRUCE HANNAH, Esq.,

Barrister-at-Law, and Advocate of the High Court, Calcutta

MOTILAL BANAR SIDASS Delhi :: Varanasi :: Patna

# MOTILAL BANARSIDASS

# Indological Publishers and Booksellers

Head Office: BUNGALOW ROAD, JAWAHAR NAGAR, DELHI-7

Branches: 1. CHOWK, VARANASI-I (U.P.)

2. ASHOK RAJPATH, PATNA-4 (BIHAR)

First Edition: Calcutta, 1912
Reprinted: Delhi, 1978
(Cloth)
Price \$6.25 (Paper)

#### Printed in India

#### DEDICATED

TO

# E. DENISON ROSS,

TO WHOSE INTEREST IN TIBETAN IT IS DUE THAT THIS

LANGUAGE HAS FOR THE FIRST TIME BEEN

INTRODUCED INTO THE CURRICULUM

OF A UNIVERSITY.

#### PREFACE.

For many centuries Tibet has been a terra incognita—little or nothing being known about it, as regards either its physical conditions or its inner life.

Not, indeed, till a few years ago, when a British force entered Lhasa, the "Place of the minor gods," was the veil withdrawn; and even then the withdrawal was only partial, transient, and very local.

As for the language, though there have been several gallant attempts to plunge into the labyrinthine obscurities of its construction—notably on the part of Alexander Csoma de Körös in 1834 and subsequently of H. A. Jäschke—that also, it must be confessed, remains more or less a mystery; for no one, I take it, is likely to aver that the present state of our knowledge on the subject is at all satisfactory.

Much, no doubt, has been contributed by the more recent labours of Rāi Sarat Chandra Dās Bahādur, Mr. Vincent Henderson, the Rev. Edward Amundsen, and Mr. C. A. Bell, I.C.S. But, in spite of all, even they, and every one else who has taken up the study, will admit that, wherever one treads, the ground still feels uncomfortably shaky, especially in regard to certain aspects of the so-called verb; wherever he gropes there is something that seems ever to elude him; and, amid the weird philological phantoms that flit uncertainly around in the prevailing gloom, his constant cry, I feel very sure, is still one for more light.

I do not for one moment claim for this grammar the character of a scientific work. Many years ago when I was studying the language in Darjeeling, under Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp—a particularly intelligent and scholarly Tibetan—it was my habit during the course of my morning's lesson to make notes of what I then learnt. After a time these notes became so numerous that for my own convenience I was obliged to reduce them to some degree of order. These ordered notes themselves growing in bulk, the idea occurred to me that I might just as well put them into the form of a book, and this I did—the result being a MS which has long lain by me, but which is now about to be published.

It is merely another attempt on the part of one who has tried

Up to a certain stage the romanized equivalent of the Tibetan is given: but after that the student is left to discern the proper pronunciation by means of his own unaided skill.

Om does not mean Oh at all, and the phrase as a whole, is much deeper and more complex in its signification than the above rendering would imply.

Om alone is an all-embracing expression, and stands mystically for the incarnation of the Deity, or rather for the immanence of the Supreme Being in, as well as for Its transcendence above, the phenomenal or existent world, so far as the terms 'immanence' and 'transcendence' are applicable to the relations subsisting between that world and Pure Subsistence. In other words, it stands for the never-ending kosmic process of the self-effacing involution of Paramâtman, or Brahman, into Existence, or the world of Matter, and Its self-expressing evolution through Matter back to Substantial Being. This process, indeed, constitutes the famous so-called "Wheel of Life" in its Kosmic aspect.

The formula may be roughly analysed thus:-

The source of all speech

The source of all speech

The source of all speech

of the

Trinity.

हा है - Wish-granting jewel; symbolical of temporal blessings; also of the Psychical Âtman or Spiritual Ego.

ম্ট্র or ম্চ্রে - Lotus; symbolical of biune man and of spiritual re-birth.

5. - It is, or I am, omnipresent.

Sct; the universal Life Principle, or Satyasya Satyam of the Upanishads i.e., the Hounieral Reality underlying Empirical Reality.

The entire phrase, therefore, merely in this one limited aspect of its meaning (and it may be read in many other ways) signifies—" The Embodiment of the Trinity, or Incarnation of Deity, is my wish-granting jewel in the lotus of spiritual rebirth"; the idea apparently being that since the Kosmical Átman, or Brahman, i.e. the first or inner principle of the universe, and the Psychical Átman, or inner principle of individual Man, are essentially one and the same, our hope of spiritual rebirth is assured in and by the fact of the eternal subsistence of Brahman and the ceaselessness of the kosmic process above referred to—human re-incarnation being a microcosmic effect, or aspect, of the macrocosmic law.

Hence, whenever a lama is heard droning out his  $Om\ mani\ p\bar{a}$  me  $h\bar{u}m$ , he is really reciting his version of one of the profoundest creeds known to philosophy—but in most cases probably with an artless ignorance that is equally profound.

Another mistake that one often meets with, especially in Theosophical literature, is that which represents the word Devachan as signifying The dwelling of the gods, doubtless from some vague idea that it is derived from the Perso-Hindustāni words Dewa, 'a god,' and Khān, or Khāneh, 'a dwelling-house.' It is really the Tibetan word  $\nabla \hat{\gamma}$ 

No one will be better pleased than myself to see any errors in this book corrected, or doubts removed, by competent critics. I am conscious that there must be errors, and I know there are doubts; while the desire of all who are interested in the language cannot but be to see our knowledge of it advanced.

My acknowledgments are due to the grammarians already named, and especially to Mr. Henderson and Mr. Bell, whose respective manuals and vocabularies marked a considerable advance upon the grammars that they supplemented and, if I may say so, displaced. The earlier grammars by Csoma de Körös and Jäschke were concerned for the most part, if not solely, with archaic classical Tibetan. The former's "Colloquial Phrases" were 'anything but what would now be regarded as colloquial; while Jäschke's colloquial was that of Western Tibet. These grammars, therefore, were not altogether satisfactory for the purposes of modern requirements. Moreover, the manner in which they dealt with the mysteries of the verb left much to be desired. As for the late Rev. Graham Sandberg's grammar, though very elaborate and learned,

X PREFACE.

it did not really constitute a bar to the successful appearance of the Manuals above alluded to. Indeed it may perhaps be said that not until the publication of Mr. Bell's book were the true forms and functions of the verb, and especially of \$\times\_5\times\_1\times\_and \$\times\_5\times\_1\times\_

I desire also to acknowledge my obligations to the Hon'ble Vice-Chancellor (Sir Ashutosh Mukerji, Kt.) and Syndicate of the Calcutta University, under whose auspices this contribution to the study of Tibetan has attained the honour and privilege of publication.

Lastly, my grateful thanks are also due to Dr. and Mrs. Denison Ross for much kindness and help accorded from time to time; and perhaps most of all to my Mūnshi, Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp, and to Mr. David Macdonald of Kalimpong (probably the first Tibetan scholar in India) who was kind enough to go through the entire MS. and to favour me with his critical comments and general approval.

H. B. H.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

# CHAPTER I.

## PRELIMINARY.

				Page
Ş	I.	The $ math{\eta} $ Ka-K'a	• •	1
		I. The T A KA-LI	• •	1
		II. The $\sqrt[3]{2}$ A-Li	••	3
Ş	2.	Romanized Equivalents	• •	5
Ş	3.	Phonetic Modifications of Vowels	• •	8
•		Notes		11
ğ	4.	The Six Reversed Letters	• •	15
ġ	<b>5</b> .	The Seven Consonants to which _ may be subjoint	ined	16
Ş	6.	The Fourteen Consonants to which $\gamma$ may be sub	joined	17
Ş	7.	The Six Consonants to which 5 may be subjoin	ed	18
Ş	8.	The Six Silent Consonants to which a may be sul	ojoined	18
Ş	9.	The Sixteen Consonants to which a may be sub	joined	18
Ş	10.	The Twelve Ra-go Consonants	• •	21
Ş	11.	The Ten La-go Consonants	• •	21
\$	12.	The Twelve Sa-go Consonants		21
Š	13.	The Five Prefixes	• •	2 <b>2</b>
ģ	14.	Initial Letters and the Prefixes each may take		24
-		Notes		28
Š	15.	Peculiarities of Pronunciation		29
\$	16.	The Ten Consonantal Affixes	• •	33
5	17.	The Eleven Final Duplications		34
ş	18.	Colloquial Duplications		37
ş	19.	The Tone System		39
§	20.	Writing and Punctuation		45

							Page
\$	21. Sp	elling	• •	• •	• •	• •	<b>5</b> 0
Ş	22. Tr	ansliterat	tion	• •		• •	55
Ş	23. Us	e of the	Tibetan Diction	ary			<b>55</b>
Ş	24. In	dicative	and Differentiat	ing Particle	es	• •	<b>57</b>
δ	25. Th	e Cases o	and their Signs		• •		61
•	I.	The No	ominative Case			• •	62
	II.	The Vo	cative Case			• •	63
	III.	The Ob	ojective or Accus	sative Case			63
	IV.	The Ge	enitive Case	. •			<b>63</b>
	v.	The ${f D}$ a	tive Case			• •	65
	VI.	The Ag	gentive Case			• •	67
	VII.	The Lo	ocative Case	• • •	• •	• •	69
	VIII.	The $P\epsilon$	eriodal or Durati	ional Case			71
	IX.	The M	odal Case			• •	73
	X.	The Ab	olative Case			• •	75
	XI.	The Te	rminative or Tr	ansitive Ca	se	• •	77
Ş	26. N	JMERALS.					
	1.	The Co	urdinal Numbers	• •		• •	82
	II.	$The \ Co$	urdinals accordin	g to Alphab	petical Enu	mera-	
		tic	on	••	• •		85
		Notes	:				
		1.	Pronunciation			• •	86
		2.	Affixes	• •	• •		86
		3.	Conjunctions	• •			87
		4.	The Indefinite	Article			87
		5.	Approximate N	<b>lum</b> bers	• •	• •	87
		6.	Ordinal Number	ers			88
		7.	Distributive Nu	umbers			88
		8.	Aggregates	• •	• •		89
		9.	Fractions		• •		89
		10.	Adverbial Card	linal Numb	ers		90
		11.	,, Ordi	nal ,,		• •	91
		12.	Definite and Ir	ndefinite N	umerals	• •	91
		13	Noun Substant	cives	• •		93
		14.	Notation by le	tters			93

# CHAPTER II.

# ETYMOLOGY.

											Page
Ş.	27.	The I	Defin	ite Art	ticle		• •		. • •	• •	95
δ	<b>28.</b>	The I	ndef	inite A	rticle		•		• •	• •	99
Ş	29.	The I	Noun	•							
	A	-Stru	CTU	RE	• •					• •	101
		1. M	Iono	yllabl	es, Diss	yllal	bles,	and	l Polysylla	bles	101
				effix 8			••		••		104
		з. Т	The a	affix §	<b>]</b> 5'				• •	••	104
		4. T	he a	រffix ភ្ញី	<sup>]</sup> 力.		•**2		• •	• •	106
		5. <b>T</b>	he a	ffix 2	<b>1</b> ∌.				• •	••	106
		6. A	Abstr	act No	ouns		••		• •		106
	В.	—Inf	LEXI	ON			· • •				•
			Fende								107
		2. · A	<i>Vumb</i>	er					• •		109
		<b>3.</b> C	ase				• •		• •	• •	111
			I.	Noun	ending	in a	Vov	vel	• •	• •	111
			II.	,,	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	,,,	可.	or [		• •	115
		I	II.	,,	,,	٠,	5,	₽.	or N	• •	116
		I	IV.	,,,	,,	,,	ক্',	ম',	خ. or \	. ••	116
Ş	30.	Тне	Арј	ECTIVE	<b>.</b>						
_			I.	Form	and Pl	ace				• •	116
		,	II.	Augm	enting	of A	djec	tive	s		127
		1	II.	The C	ompara	tive	Deg	gree			129
		I	$\mathbf{v}$ .	The S	uperlati	ive D	egre	ee			131
		,	$\mathbf{V}$ .	Other	$\stackrel{-}{ ext{Method}}$	s of	Com	pari	son		134
5	31.	Тне	Pro	NOUN.							
•			I.	Perso	nal Pro	nour	ıs		. •	• •	135
			H.	Decle	nsion o	f Per	rson	al P	ronouns		138
		1	II.	The F	Reflexiv	e Pr	onot	ıns	• •		140
		]	IV.	Comp	ounds i	n حر	<b>:</b> R	ang	• •		143

			Page
V. Possessive Pronouns			
1. Ordinary Personal Pr	ronouns		144
2. Reflexive Possessive	Pronouns		145
VI. Demonstrative Pronouns			147
VII. The Reciprocal Pronoun	• •	• •	150
VIII. Interrogative Pronouns	••		151
IX. Relative and Correlative Pr	conouns		
A. Relative Pronouns	• •		153
B. Correlative Pronounce	s	• •	160
X. Indefinite Pronouns	• •	• •	169
§ 32. Adverbs		• •	177
§ 33. Postpositions	• •	• •	194
§ 34. Conjunctions	• •	• •	201
§ 35. \( \tilde{	••	••	207
§ 36. 45 To have	• •	• •	228
§ 37. भेर्प To be	• •	• •	229
§ 38. The Verb.			
I. Preliminary	• •	• •	<b>239</b>
II. Roots	• •	• •	2 <b>39</b>
III. Auxiliary Verbs	••	• •	243
IV. Auxiliary Particles.			
(1) मि, मी, णी, etc.	• •	• •	244
(2) দী <b>ষ',</b> দী <b>ষ',</b> দী <b>ষ',</b> etc.	• •	• •	245
(3) मीद मीद, गीद, etc.		• •	245
(4) = 7, 7, 3	••	• •	246
(٥) څد, څد, گود	• •	. • •	247
6) 디지 and 디자	• •	• •	248
(7) বৃষ্	• •	• •	249
(8) <b>계취</b>		• •	249
(9) <b>ન</b> ેં	• •	• •	251
(10) A'	• •	• •	252

						Page
	(11)	<b>Ţ</b>		• •	• •	254
	(12)	9		• •	• •	<b>25</b> 5
	(13)	5 <sup>C</sup> .	• •			2 <b>5</b> 5
		5, 5, 5, 5,	শ্বু, থ		• •	257
		यहिंद and यहिंद			••	<b>25</b> 8
	(16)	ರ್ದ.	• • •		• •	<b>2</b> 59
	(17)	5ুম' and 5ুম'ম'		••		259
V.	Moods a	nd Tenses.				
	A.—Infi	nitive Mood		• •		259
	B.—The	Supine	• •	••		263
	C.—The	Verbal Noun		• •	• •	265
	D.—Par	ticiples			• •	267
	E.—Ger	unds				271
	F.—Indi	icative Mood.				
	(0	a) Present				272
	(1	) Imperfect	• •			275
	(0	c) Perfect		• •		276
	(0	d) Past Indefin	i <b>t</b> e			277
	(6	Pluperfect	• •	• •	• •	279
	(	f) Future	• •	• •		281
	G. —Sub	junctive and Co	nditional	Moods		283
	H.—Pot	ential Mood	• •	• •		285
	I. —Pro	bability		• •		288
	J. — <b>H</b> o	rtative Mood		• •		290
	K.—Pu	rposive Mood				292
	L.—Pre	cative Mood		• •		292
	M.—Per	missive Mood				2 <b>9</b> 3
	N.—Opt	tative Mood				294
	0.—Imp	perative Mood				296
VI.	The Pas	sive Voice		• •		299
VII.	Compou	nd Verbs				300
.IIIV	Verbs o	f becoming, gro	wing, cha	anging, etc.		303
IX.	Inceptiv	ves		• •		303
$\mathbf{X}$ .	Immine	nce				304

					Page
XI.	Continuatives				304
XII.	Finality or Accompli	$\mathbf{shment}$		•	305
XIII.	Desideratives			• •	305
XIV.	Frequentatives	• •		• •	306
XV.	Use of the Perfect	Root in the	e Colloq <b>uial</b>		307
	CHAP	TER III.			
39.	Syntax	• •	• •		308
	APPENDIX of	CONJUGA	ATIONS.		
I.	Colloquial 📆 5.21. To	o be present	; To exist;	To be	310
II.	LITERARY	Di	itto		315
III.	Colloguial Mart. 1	To be	4 •		320
IV.	LITERARY Ditto	• •	• •		325
v.	W5'TI To have; to 1	0088e88	• •		331
VI.	Active, Transitive,	4-Rooted	Colloquial	Verb	
	~~		• •	• •	331
VII.	LITERARY Ditt	o		• •	340
VIII.	Passive, 4-Rooted (	Colloquiai	্ Verb স্ইন	Ħ To	
	be sent			•	349
IX.	Active, one-Rooted (	OLLOQUIAL	Verb মর্নু	To To	
	see				354
X.	Neuter, one-Rooted	Colloquia	L Verb বৃদার	To	
	be glad, To rejoice				<b>36</b> 0
XI.	LITERARY Ditt		• •	• •	361
XII.	Passive, 4-Rooted	LITERARY	Verb महिंद	<b>5</b> or	
	শ্রিদেবমান্ত্রানা To t	e sent	• •	• •	<b>36</b> 8
XIII.	Active, 2-Rooted Con	LLOQUIAL V	erb ব্লুঁবি ব	To go	371
XIV.	LITERARY Ditto		• •		<b>37</b> 8
XV.	2-Rooted LITERARY	Verb ৭নুস	'To becom	ie, etc.	383

YD	1	1
A 4	ц	ı

#### . CONTENTS.

		Page
XVI.	Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 35.4 To do,	
	To make, etc.	387
	LITERARY Ditto	389
XVIII.	Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 35 5 5	
	or What To be made, To be done, etc	393
XIX.	Passive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 57 To be	
	made, To be done, etc	394
XX.	Passive, LITERARY Verb 35-47-29-7 To be	
	made, or done, etc	395

# Tibetan Grammar.

# CHAPTER I.

#### PRELIMINARY.

§ 1.—The M Ka-K'a, or TIBETAN GRAPHIC SYSTEM.

I.— Τά Kā-li, or Consonantal Series of thirty letters.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
η	Ka.	Like K in the Urdu word لب KAB, When. A compact sound.
P	K'a	$Kh$ , forcibly aspirated. Like the Persian $\dot{c}$ $Kh$ .
म	Ġa.	Pronounced softly, from low down in the throat, rather more sharply than hard English G, and in a way that to English ears seems to give it the sound of K.
· Ľ	Nga	Like the sound of ng in the English word sing. It often begins a word in Tibetan. As a final, often represented by a superscribed o, called o TTTT o Lä'-kor, or o cipher.
₹	Спа	Like the Ch in charge. A compact sound.
చ	Ch'a	Chha. A forcibly aspirated ch.
E .	Ja, J'a	Like the $J$ in $jar$ . As an initial it is slightly aspirated, and may be pronounced like $\mathcal{F}$ ch.

N.B.—For the powers of these letters, as represented by their romanized equivalents, see § 2.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
3	Nya	Like the combined sound of the nya in lanyard.
5	Та	A compact dental sound, like the Urdu or Persian , or the Bengali .
ঘ	T'a	Also dental, but forcibly aspirated.
5	Ďа	This is not exactly a dental $d$ , nor is it an aspirated $d$ , as sometimes described, but a dental sound rather like the $th$ in $think$ , as pronounced by some Irishmen; or like the Bengali $\overline{\eta}$ , but with a strong similarity to a dental $t$ . A soft sound.
ৰ	Na	A dental N, softly sounded.
4	Pa	English P, but more fully and compactly pronounced.
শ	P'a	Not Ph (i.e. F, or Fh), but P-h. A strong aspirate.
Ø	Ва	Sharper than the English $B$ , and rather like $P$ , but softer than the latter.
ह्य	Ma	English $M$ , sometimes abbreviated into $o$ , written over the initial, and representing final $m$ , and called $o$ $m > m > o$ La'-kor, $o$ cipher. It is also called
		ราการ To'-kor and is the same as the Sanskrit Anuswara.
₹	Tsa	Like the sound of Ts, or Russian Tsē. A compact sound.
<b>క</b>	Ts'a	Not Tsh, but Ts-h, strongly aspirated.
Ę	Dzʻa	Not Dzh, but Dz-h. Aspirated.
댐	Wa	English W.
9	Źhya	Something like the French J in jadis, or Persian 5, or Russian Zhē, but with a tendency towards the sound sh, and also with the ya sound. Hence, hard z'hya, or soft shya.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
3	Źa	English $Z$ , but inclining to sound of $s$ .
<b>a</b>	<b>*8.</b>	Spiritus lenis, with a vowel-sound like that in the Urdu word — Bas, Enough; but soft and long, as though gently emanating from the throat. In words from Sanskrit it is used as a "mora," to denote prosodical length, i.e. a long syllable.
W	Ya	English Y, as in yard, you, yoke, ye, yes, yiddish, yea.
۲,	Ra	English $R$ , well sounded.
ୟ	La	English $L$ , but, at the end of a syllable, sounded either very faintly or not at all, and sometimes changed to $\mathbf{x}$ $Ra$ .
4	Sha	Sh. Full, strong sound.
শ	Sa	S. Full, strong sound, like ss in hiss, but, at the end of a syllable, not sounded at all.
5	Ha	H. Well aspirated.
<b>LES</b>	A	Like the vowel-sound in the Urdu word — Bas, Enough. Pronounced very short: but a harder, fuller and compacter sound than that of $\mathfrak{A}^*$ . The sound of $\mathfrak{M}^*$ is inherent in all simple non-final consonants unqualified by any vowel-sign, and in all compound consonants sounding as one, when similarly unqualified. It is not inherent in the consonant $\mathfrak{A}^*$ which has a softer and more ema-
		nating sound.

II.—The INA Ā-LI, or VoweL-Series, being five vowels, and four vowel-signs. For the purpose of illustrating the signs, one of the vowels, namely, INA, which is also regarded as a consonant by Tibetans, is adopted as a basis. Any other consonant, however, would do equally well.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
<b>ISI</b>	. а	Like a in — Bas, Enough. Pronunciation short hard, compact and full. Inherent in all non-final consonants not qualified by any vowel-signs and in single-letter and compound-letter syllables sounding as one syllable, when similarly unqualified. Thus, in 🏋 T'ANG, Path, it is inherent
		in $\Xi$ but not in the final $\Xi$ . So it is inherent in $\Xi$ NGA, $I$ , but not in $\Xi$ NGO, $Face$ ; and in
		also ceases to inhere by reason of modifications other than qualifying vowel-signs, as will hereafter be shown. See § 3.
ঠৌ	i	Short, like the i in is. The sign is a called माम
		G'I-G'U, The Angle, and it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, T KYI, A sign of the Genitive Case.
181	u	Short, like the $u$ in $full$ . The sign is $\sim$ called
<b>S</b>		সুষ্ট্র Źнулв-күυ, The hook, and it is placed under the letter it modifies. Thus, 5° D'u, A
		sign of the Terminative Case.
<b>উ</b>	<b>e</b>	Short, like a in made, or the Italian e. The sign is - called $\mathbf{A} \mathfrak{I}^{\mathbf{C}} \mathfrak{I}^{\mathbf{C}}$ Deng-bu, The standing
		stroke, and it is placed over the letter it modifies.  Thus, $\hat{\mathbf{x}}$ : $\hat{\mathbf{x}}$ : Re-re, each.
ট্য	0	Short, like the o in for, or rock. The sign is ~
		called NA-RO, The horns over the nose, and
		it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus,
		Ro, A corpse; नेंद्र Gong, Price; न्नेंन्य Lod-
		PA, To read; ATT Lo', Lightning; F Do, Stone.

§ 2.—The ROMANIZED EQUIVALENTS adopted in this work, showing the Powers of the thirty consonants.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
••	•	Acute accent, used for instance with $g$ , when $\P$ GA, is pronounced almost like $k$ ; and with $d$ , when $\P$ DA, is pronounced almost like $T$ . Thus, $\P$ GONG, $Price$ , because it is pronounced nearly like KONG; but $\P$ GO, $Price$ , pronounced like the ordinary hard English $g$ . So also $\P$ DE, $The$ , $That$ , because it is pronounced almost like dental $TE$ ; but
	U	This sign, placed over any letter, signifies
·••	,	a raising of the tone.  Spiritus lenis, or gentle breathing. It is placed before c, thus 'a, to represent Q. For example, TTQ. K'A, Order, Command. For simplicity's sake, however, we shall seldom use it. It will never be used to represent Q. as a prefix.
	c	Spiritus asper, or rough breathing. Thus PK'A, for KHA. e.g., ABK'T K'YEB-WA. To carry away.
ग	K	Tonic pitch high.
ĮT.	K'	Pitch lower than K.
म	Ġ	Pitch deep.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
না' guarded	G	e.g.— GAM, Box, Chest. Pitch higher than g.
<b>c</b>	Ng	Pitch low; sometimes represented by o Lä'-kor, o cipher.
₹	Ch	Pitch very high.
<b>. .</b>	Ch'	Pitch lower than ch.
<b>É</b>	J, <b>J</b> ʻ	When an initial, represented by J'. Thus E' J'A, Tea. When it has a prefix, represented by J. Thus, RENT JÜ-PA, To cling;
		সহমান Ja-wa, To come to, To meet, To pay one's respects to. Pitch very low.
3	Ny	Pitch low.
5	T	Pitch very high.
স ঘ	T'	Pitch lower than T.
5	р	Pitch very low.
5 guarded	$\mathbf{D}$	e.g.— Ž. Do, Stone. Pitch higher than D.
4	N	Pitch low.
4	P	Pitch very high.
4	P'	Pitch lower than P.
7	B, W, V	Pitch very deep.
म" and o		o (called o 五万元 La'-kor, cipher). Is sometimes placed on top of a letter, and stands for a final ng, or m, or ms. The pitch of $N$ is low.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
र्ड	Ts	Pitch high.
<b>క</b>	Ts'	Pitch lower than Ts.
Ę	Dz·	Pitch very low.
댐	w	Pitch low.
<b>(9</b> )	Źhy	Pitch very low. e.g., & ZHYI-MO, Hat, pronounced almost like SHI-MO.
<b>夏</b> . 22.	<b>Ż</b>	e.g.,—37 ŹA-WA, To eat, pronounced almost like SA-WA. Pitch very low.
<b>q</b>	' <b>A</b>	When 's a prefix, it is not transliterated at all in this work. Pitch very low.
<b>W</b>	Y	Pitch very low.
5	R	Pitch low.
્ય	<b>L</b>	Lowest pitch of all.
4	Sh	)
*	S	Pitch high.
5	н	Pitch very high.
শে	A	Pitch low.

Note.—The remarks in column 3 regarding Tonic Pitch refer to the Rev. Mr. Amundsen's Tone-system. I would, however, advise the student to direct his attention to the compactness or otherwise of his utterance, and to the shortness or length of his vowel-sounds, rather than to Pitch of Tone. See § 19.

Other letters, compound and reversed, are not included in the above tables. They are dealt with in §§ 4 et seq.

§ 3.—PHONETIC MODIFICATIONS OF THE FIVE VOWELS. These are based on W A, as representing any of the thirty consonants.

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
SA.	8.	Short, hard and compact, as already explained. Ex. ANN K'AM, Empire, Realm.  Pronounced, as regards the vowel-sound, exactly like that of the English word Come.  W' differs from Q' in that the latter is a long, slow and gentle emanation, while w' is uttered forcibly.
N+비紅.	ā	Long, like a in English far. Ex. 5773' K'A,
) <b>≈+</b> = ≈. }		Order, Command; মন্ম La, A courteous expression. Long, like a in far. Ex. শু-পু Ka-sha, A sort
SI C SI C	<b>a.</b>	of grass; 5.42.3.8. Tā-le-la-ma, Dalai Lama, or Gyā-wa rim-po-ch'e; 2.8. L'ā-sa.
ঙ্গে	â, ā, wā,	Long, like the o in corner, or the aw in Bawl, or the Chinese wā as in Kwān, in transliterations from Sanskrit, Indian, Chinese or other foreign languages. Thus, This RA-ME-SHÂ-RA, A holy place near Lanka or
		Ceylon; The Tartar dynasty; The Last Emperor of China of the Tartar dynasty; The Last Emperor Dâl-Ch'in-B'ā-dur, A Mongolian King of Tibet. Or long, like the a in far, in Tibetan words. Thus, Thus, Thus, Salt; The K'ā-tal Crow, mag-pie; The Pa'-zhyā, A mitreshaped cap. Or it serves to show that a letter is not a prefix, but an initial. Thus,

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
ष्य+द ष्य+दः }	- ä.	wise have read NGX-PO; 57N TO DI-PO, A district of Tibet south-east of To and Kongpo, which might otherwise have read GX-PO. Short, like a in can. Ex. 795T ZHYÄN-PA (pronounced ZHYÄM-PA) other; or, 55T
' '		DÄ'-PA, Faith.
R1+81. }	ät	Long, like a in can't, as pronounced by a Yankee. Ex. 경기자 NYE-XX, Disciple,
<b>W</b> .	i	Pupil: 퍼지턴 or GYZ-PO, King.  Short, like i in is. Ex. 따전다 YIN-PA (pro-
জ+ম জ+ম. জ+মম.	ì	nounced YIM-PA), To be.  Long, like i in ravine. Ex. 只管可以口 Jt-PA  To be afraid; 可以 Gt, A sign of the Agen
S. C.	I	tive Case; \( \)\tag{Tank Kyi-la, Among, amid} in the midst.  Also long, like i in ravine. Used in translit erations from foreign languages. Ex.
		SHĪ-LA, Moral conduct; 57727 PUN-DA
ષ્ટ્રી.	e	Short, like a in made, or Italian e Ex. 5 ĎE, The, That.
ध्ये+म्।शः		Like the preceding, but long. Ex. ସମ୍ମିସାଷ' GE
জ <del>়</del> +ল. জ	ð	Devil, Demon, Evil-spirit; 中以 SHE PA, To know; 和口 SEL-WA, or SE-WA To absolve.

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
জী+ <b>ব</b> ) জী+ <b>ব</b> }	<b>ė</b>	Short, like e in get. Ex. & T Ch'èn-po (pronounced Ch'èm-po), Great, Big, Large; \$\frac{3}{5}Z' J'è'-pa, To do, to act, to perform, to achieve.
জী	ai	Like i in mind. Ex. TWA KAI-LA-SHA, A mountain on the N. shore of Lake Mana-
		sarowar; 원호 MAITRI, Love, Friendship; 통합리 TAI-LING-GA, The modern Telingana.
જો.	u	Short, like u in pull. Ex. 53. Hur-po,  Active; AJ Bu, Worm; & Ch'u, Water.
ম্ব+নাধ.	ប	Long, like oo in snooze. Ex. 지역기자다 ŽHYU
,03 is as	ā	Same as preceding. Ex. $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$ Wai du- RYA, Azure stone, Lapis lazuli; $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$ Hum, $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$
		Brutal.
यु+दः यु+रः }	ü	Like u in French une. Ex. ワラダ Ďtn, Seven; ろうつ Kti'-pa, Thread.
প্র+ম. } প্র+ম. }	ti	Same as last, but long. Ex. 5자 Ď'ë, Period, Time; 씾과 Yë, Land, Country.
<u>w</u> .	0	Short, like o in for, or rock. This is the commonest o in Tibetan. Ex. 資知 了'OM,

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
		Bazaar; 以可以 YA'-PO, Good; 口至口 Zo-WA, To build; N Lo, Year; 內 K'YI-MO, Bitch; E' \ O' J'O-WO, Nobleman, master, lord; 口 \ O' \ O' O', Grandfather.
र्छे + म्यूश.	ō	Long, like o in mode. Ex. 598 Ts'5, A crowd, a multitude.
ğ.	ŏ	Like the last. Used only in transliterating.  Ex. 758 Go-TA-MA, Buddha's name.
জ+ক ) জ+5 }	ö	Short, like eu in French Jeune. Ex. 59555 Gön-pa (pronounced Göm-pa), A monastery, 35556 Chö'-pän, Diadem.
<u>জ</u> +ম. }	8	Same as last, but long. Ex. $\overline{\mathcal{S}}$ N' Ch'ō, Religion; $\overline{\mathcal{S}}$ N' NYA-D'ō, Fishing net.
%. €.	au, ou	Like ou in Noumenon. Ex. \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Sometimes also spelt WG or WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \text{Fig. Sometimes also spelt WG } \\ \text{Ex. PB.5.N' or \$\overline{\Pi} \varepsilon \v

## Notes.

1.—In the above Tabular Statement the sign + in column 1 means "as modified by the addition of." It will be seen that the basic, inherent "" a is subject to modifications, not only when quali-

fied by vowel-signs, but also when followed or subjoined by  $\mathfrak{A}^{\circ}$  'a, or when subjoined by  $\mathfrak{H}^{\circ}$  'Ha, or  $\mathfrak{A}$  wa-zur, or when followed by  $\mathfrak{K}^{\circ}$  Na,  $\mathfrak{A}^{\circ}$  La,  $\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}$  Da,  $\mathfrak{N}^{\circ}$  Sa, and  $\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}\mathfrak{N}^{\circ}$  G'a-sa, which lest is sometimes represented by the abbreviation  $\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}$  Ta-log-ta, i.e.  $\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}$  Ta reversed, and called  $\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}\mathfrak{N}^{\circ}\mathfrak{T}^{\circ}$  Ga-sa-da-kyo'

2.—In words containing those vowel-modifications which are affected by A' la, the A' when pronounced, should be uttered very softly. Often it is not pronounced at all. e.g., 55A' NGÜL, or NGÜ, Money; ANA'E' SÖL-J'A, or SÖ-J'A, Tea.

Where A, as a final, is followed by the particle A wa, the latter, in the Colloquial, is often changed into T ra. e.g., NATICATION (instead of A) カラスス CH'O'-PA BÜ-RA NANG-WA, To sacrifice (Honorific form). Sometimes, however, A is merely duplicated. See § 18.

which are affected by 5. D'a, or 5. G'a, or sometimes 5. G'a-sa, the following peculiarity should be noted. In the case of monosyllabic words or final syllables ending in one of the above letters, such letter is not exactly pronounced. Yet it is hinted at; for, just before pronouncing it, the speaker stops short, and, by a sharp contraction of the glottis, forms a kind of innominate sound, which perhaps is best described by reference to the Persian or Arabic 6 'ain, or to the curious throat-sound emitted by some Glaswegians when, instead of saying Saturday, they say Se'urday, or instead of saying water, they say wa'er. This emphasized hiatus-sound will be represented by an apostrophe. Ex. 55.7 J'E'-PA, To do; 57 CH'A', Hand (Honorific term):

ই'মানুসাধা Nyi-চত', Parasol. In particular, as regards syllables ending in সা' G'a, the following rules may be observed:—

- (a) When the syllable forms a word by itself, like 3刊 CHI'

  (Chig'), A, an; 只可 Du' (Dug), Is; or 河可 Sho'

  (Shog'), Imperative of 风口口 Yong-wa, To come, the 可

  G'a should never be pronounced, but only hinted at, in manner above described.
- (b) When the syllable in which 可 or 可以 occurs is only one in a word of two or more syllables, and is not the final syllable, the 可 or 可以 may be pronounced, or only hinted at, at pleasure. Ex. 如可以 Ďig'-PA, or Ďi'-PA, Sin: 支河支河 Ďoś-Ďoś, or Ďo'-Ďo', A Lump; 以可以 YAĠ-PO, or YA'-PO, Good; 对可以 ĞYŌ-PO, or ĞYŌĠ-PO, Quick.
- (c) Practically the same rules may be observed as regards final 다 la. Ex. 디자 NGA, Fatigue, and 및과고 Ďelwa, or Ďe-wa, To fasten on.
- 4.—A consonant, having a prefix, but no affix, nor any qualifying vowel-sign, must be supported by the lengthening affix Q'a, which prevents the prefix from being mistaken for an initial letter. Ex. AMA: K'A, Order, command, word; ASA: D'A, Arrow.
- 5.—5. B, is usually pronounced W, when, in a word of more than one syllable, it is the initial letter of the second or other following syllable, and the final letter of the immediately preceding syllable is either 5.2.5 or 3, or if such preceding syllable does not end in a consonant, but is governed by inherent 5, or one of the

vowel-signs.  $\[ \nabla \]$  also takes the sound of w when it is prefixed by  $\[ \nabla \]$ , Da, and has no modifying vowel-sign or Yata sign. In the latter case it takes the sound of the modifying signs. Ex.:— $\[ \nabla \]$ ,  $\[$ 

The letter  $\mathfrak{P}$  Ba, when sounding as a w, and followed by  $\mathfrak{P}$  i, is pronounced somewhat like the hard Russian vowel 0, but with a w before it, or something like the English word way, save that the a must be given the vowel-sound of  $\mathfrak{P}$ , and merged into the succeeding i, so as to make the two into a sort of diphthongal sound.

Second vowels, following immediately after a simple or compound consonant, whether qualified by a vowel-sign or not, are always based on Q''a, not on W'a. Ex. 43.5% not 93.5% CAU-TA-MA; AG' LE-U, Chapter; AG' MI-U, Little man.

§ 4.—The SIX REVERSED (i.e 🏋 LO') LETTERS. Used chiefly in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc.

Letter.	Name.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
5	Ta-log-ţa or Ġa-sa-da Kyó	Ţ	The dental letter 5° Ta reversed and pronounced as a palatal. A common abbreviation for the double affix 75° Ex. 555° Pung-Ro, instead of 555° ETINI
<b>P</b>	T'a-log'ț'a	Ţ'	ই T'a reversed, and pronounced as an aspirated palatal.
٦	Ďa-log-da	Ď	5. Da reversed, and pronounced as an unaspirated palatal, much as some Irishmen pronounce the th in think.
Ą	Na-log-ņa	Ņ	The dental letter of Na reversed, and pronounced as a palatal.
Pr	Sha-log-K'a	K'	
<b>T</b>	Ka-Sha-log-tā- pa (지기자기) Kʻya	K'y	可 Ka, with a reversed 写 Sha subjoined. Pronounced like 写 K'ya, strongly aspirated.

풜

- § 5.—The seven consonants to which W Ya, in the form of MAY BE SUBJOINED. W so subjoined is called W757N or W757 YA-TĀ, Ya-subjoined.
  - $\mathfrak{J}$  This is Kya, and it is so pronounced.
  - f This is K'ya, and it is so pronounced.
  - This is Gya, and it is pronounced as some Irishmen pronounce Garden, guide, etc., i.e. Gyarden, Gyide, etc.
  - This is Pya, but YA-TA changes the pronunciation into that of  $\mathfrak{F}$  Cha.
  - This is P'ya, but YA-TA, changes the pronunciation into that of  $\mathcal{E}'$  Ch'a.
  - This is Bya but YA-TA' changes the pronunciation into that of E' That is to say, when J is an initial, it is pronounced J', which is practically like T' Cha; when not an initial, it is pronounced J. If prefixed by J' Da, it is pronounced Y; and if further qualified by a vowel-sign, it takes the Y sound merged into the vowel-sound. Ex. JJT YAR, Summer; JJTN YING, Region, space (e.g. Heaven's vault); JJTN YUG-PA, or YU'-PA, To brandish, flourish; JJTN YEN-CH'E-WA, To separate.
    - This is Mya, but YA-TA changes the pronunciation to that of ya.

§ 6.—The fourteen consonants to which  $\stackrel{\sim}{\sim}$  Ra, in the form of  $\stackrel{\sim}{\sim}$ , may be subjoined.  $\stackrel{\sim}{\sim}$  so subjoined is called  $\stackrel{\sim}{\sim}$ 757, Ra-tā, Ra-subjoined.

Letter.	Name.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
Ŧ	Ka-ra-tā-Ṭa	Ţ	Like 7
EX.	Kʻa-ra-tā-Ṭʻa	Ļ,	<b>P</b>
म्	Ga-ra-tā-Ņa	Ď	· 7 \
5	Ta-ra-tā-Ṭa	Ţ	·· 7
57	T'a-ra-tā-Ţ'a	$\mathbf{\dot{L}}_{v}$	P'
5	Ďa-ra-tā-Ņa	Ď	All palatals.
	Na-ra-tā-Ņa	Ņ	p
क्रा स	Pa-ra-tā-Ṭa	Ţ	٠٠ ٦
**	P'a-ra-tā-Ṭ'a	Ţ'	B.
7	Ba-ra-tā-Da	Ď	ح
শ্	Ma-ra-tā-Ma	M	
4	Sha-ra-tā-Shra	Shr	
Ŋ	Sa-ra-tā-Sa	s	This is the pronunciation in Literary Tibetan and in Sikhim and Būtān.
	Sa-ra-tā <b>-</b> Ṭa	Ţ	This palatal pronunciation is the pronunciation in 538.40.55 Ü-p'x-kä', Colloquial of Ü.
	Sa-ra-tā-Hra	Hr	Pronunciation in 되었다면지 등 TSANG-P'Ä- Kä', Colloquial of Tsang.
<b>\</b> 5	Ha-ra-tā-Hra	Hr	

§ 7.—The six consonants to which 5° Ha, in the form 5 (5°75 $\P$ 8° Ha-ta), may be subjoined.

With the exception of  $\mathfrak{F}$   $L'\bar{a}$  (commonly seen  $Lh\bar{a}$ ), which is frequently met with, these Ha-compounds are only used in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc. The effect of subjoining  $\mathfrak{F}$  Ha, is to lengthen and slightly aspirate the consonant. Ex.  $\mathfrak{F}$   $\mathfrak{F}$ 

§ 8.—The six silent consonants to which A. La (A.757N. La-tā) is subjoined.

The effect of subjoining the A' is to raise and emphasize the tone, and to make the sound more compact.

게 된 집 집 집 All pronounced 다 La.
Pronounced Ďa.

EXAMPLES:—周气河文·Lä'kor, Cipher, such as o, the abbreviated 对 or C; 周·Lu, Serpent-demon; 河河公·Lõú-pa, To read; 河河泛·Lǐ-CHOR, or Läú-chor, Clamour, noise, (Literary); 河南公·Len-pa, Stupid, foolish; 夏〇·DA-WA, Month, moon; 夏河·LA-MA, Lama; 五·Lung, Wind; 河河公·Lob-pa, To learn, teach.

§ 9.—The sixteen consonants to which A. Wa-zur, in the form of 4 is subjoined.

 $\dashv$  is called WA-ZUR because it is a corner of the letter  $\maltese$  Wa. When scholars from Tibet first visited India to study Buddhistic

Literature, they did not realize that the Tibetan letter  $\mathbf{T}^{\bullet}$  represented both B and W (which in Sanskrit are denoted by  $\mathbf{T}$  and  $\mathbf{T}$ ), just as the Bengali letter  $\mathbf{T}$  represents them, and that  $\mathbf{T}^{\bullet}$   $\mathbf{W}^{a}$  was therefore unnecessary. The later scholars, however, did realize it, and since then  $\mathbf{T}^{\bullet}$   $\mathbf{W}^{a}$  has not been much used in Tibetan. It still survives, however, in some words, and in the form of  $\mathbf{T}^{\bullet}$   $\mathbf{W}^{a}$  subjoined to the consonants now under notice.

As regards Tibetan words, the effect of subjoining  $\triangleleft$  is merely to lengthen somewhat the sound of the vowel inherent in, or qualifying, the consonant. In the following examples the vowel-sound is the inherent  $\square$  a, which, when lengthened, is  $\bar{a}$ . Thus:—

TJ' KA, Oh!

ரு'ஸ் Kā-ye, Oh! Holla!

75 K'A-TA, Crow, Magpie.

সু'বা Dā-Pa, Mouth.

קבות Lab-pā, School.

5'T' Ďā-wa, A Medical plant.

J. Tsa, Spunk, tinder.

₹ Tsā, Grass, herb.

JA TSA K'A, Pasture.

煮 Ts'Ā, Salt.

g or இத் ப்புக, or ப்புக-mo, Hat, cap.

∄ ŹĀ, Nettle.

₹ RĀ, ¸¸¸¸¸ RĀ-сно, Horn, sting.

T'AG-RĀ, or T'A'-RĀ, Hartshorn.

NA LĀ-WA, A species of deer.

A Shā, Flood, high water.

A Shā-WA, Deer.

A Z Shā-P'o, Stag, buck.

ЧЭН SHA-MO, Doe, hind.

পুর্বা Shā-ṛ'u', Young deer.

WA-ZUR is also used to represent the sound of wā, as found in old Tibetan literature, and in Sanskrit, Pāli, Chinese, and other ancient foreign languages. Ex:—

স্মান্ত Hwa, Sugared medicine like lozenges (old Tibetan).

ਨਲੇਪ੍ਰਾਨ Ra-ME-SHWĀ-RA, Rameshwar, near Ceylon.

মূত্রশাধ T'o-u kwan, Last Emperor of China of the Tartar dynasty.

5ຊື່ຊື່ສຸ່ສຸ່ສຸ້ຽ້ອ Dwai- ch'in-b'a-dur, A Mongolian king of

মুন্থর Swa-B'a-t'an, Name of a town.

It also represents the sound of  $\hat{a}$  as found in modern Indian languages, e.g. Bengali, in which that sound and  $w\bar{a}$  seem to be interchangeable. Ex. Swadesi, Shâdeshi.

It is even met with in conjunction with the vowel-sound ~ Na-ro.

Ex. The second of th

WA-ŹUR also sometimes serves to show that a letter which might possibly be mistaken for a prefix is really an initial. Ex. 5 NAIGPO, Clear; 5 NAIGPO, A district in Tibet. If the WA-ŹUR had not been subjoined to the 5 in these words, one might have read them NGÄ-PO, and ĠÄ-PO.

§ 10.—The twelve consonants on which the silent State Ra-Go-Ra-Heda is placed. The effect is to raise the tonic-pitch and emphasize the sound of each consonant, except those that are regarded as masculine. As to masculine letters see § 19. Sign with Romanized equivalent, shove.

$$\mathfrak{H}^{\bullet}$$
  $Ka$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}^{\bullet}$   $Ga$ ,  $\mathfrak{E}^{\bullet}$   $Nga$ ,  $\mathfrak{E}^{\bullet}$   $Ja$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}^{\bullet}$   $Nya$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}^{\bullet}$   $Ta$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}^{\bullet}$   $Na$ ,  $\mathfrak$ 

It will be noticed that  $\P$  Ka,  $\P$  Ta,  $\P$  Ta, have not got above them the sign for heightening the Tonic-pitch, they being masculine letters and not requiring it.

§ 11.—The ten consonants on which the silent ATT La-Go, La-Head, is placed. It has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign  $\smile$ .

유 Ka, 유 Ga, 맏 Nga, 및 Cha, 맡 Ja,

ਸ਼ਾ Ta, ਸ਼ਾ Da, ਸ਼ਾ Pa, ਸ਼ਾ Ba, ਸ਼ਾ L'ā.

In all these the A' is not pronounced, except in the case of B' L'ā, and except also when there is a preceding syllable which ends in a vowel. In this latter case the A' is usually carried back and given the sound of T' n. Ex. A'AN' GÖN-CHĀ, Lock: J'B' DÄN-TA, Now. Sometimes, however, it is carried back as A', but not sounded. Yet it modifies the preceding vowel. Ex. JAT TĂ-CHA', Whip. Sometimes it even takes the sound of final A' b. Ex. JAT ZOB-TA, Mien.

§ 12.—The twelve consonants on which the silent Notation, Sa-Go, Sa-Head, is placed. It also has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign .

 $\stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Ka, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Ga, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Nga, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Nya, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Ta. \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Da,$   $\stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Na, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Pa, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Ba, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Na, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Tsa, \stackrel{\text{H}}{\Rightarrow} Dz'a.$ 

NGON-JU' NGA, THE FIVE PREFIXES, i.e. silent letters, which are prefixed to divers Initial (sometimes called Radical) letters, simple and complex, in the formation of words. Their effect is to remove the aspirate, if any, of low-toned, i.e. Feminine and Very Feminine initials, and to raise the Tonic Pitch, and make the sound more compact. Thus, take Jung, the Perfect and Imperative root of AJUG-WA, To happen, originate, arise. Here I is a feminine letter, and therefore low-toned, and, as an initial with Ya-tā, it is slightly aspirated in Jung-Wa and makes the Tonic Pitch higher, and the sound more compact.

These prefixes are really a kind of Prepositive Affixes, sometimes modifying the meaning of a word, and sometimes entering into the formation of the Present, Perfect and Future Tenses of a verb. Though doubtless once upon a time actually pronounced, they are now generally silent. In the case, however, of \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), and \(\Si\), when the syllable in which any of them occurs is preceded by a syllable ending in a vowel-sound, the \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), or \(\Si\) is often carried back in pronunciation to the vowel-sound and sounded with it. The prefixes \(\Si\) and \(\Si\) are never sounded or carried back. As regards \(\Pi\) and \(\Si\) the Colloquial has a curious custom of transmuting them into the sound of \(\Si\). Ex. \(\Si\) \(\Si\) \(\Si\) ME-B'\(\Si\) is pronounced Min-Bu', Is not; \(\Si\) \(\Si\) \(\Pi\). DA-DA is pronounced \(\Pi\) is pronounced Min-Bu', as a prefix, is sometimes given the sound of \(\Si\). Ex. \(\Si\) \(\Si\) is pronounced NAM-Z'\(\Si\), clothes.

No letters are ever superposed upon or subjoined to any prefix; and, as will be seen when we come to the paragraph on the Tone System (§ 19), Prefixes, as such, are of genders different

from those of the same letters as Initials, or even as Affixes, save in the case of 51' which is always Very Feminine.

- This prefix is of Common Gender, and it is found before the following Initials, namely, 3. Cha, 3. Nya, 5. Ta, 5. Da, 4. Na, 3. Tsa, 6. Zhya, 3. Za, W. Ya, 4. Sha, and N. Sa, all of which retain their natural sounds unaffected by the 可 save as regards Tonic Pitch and compactness of utterance, as already explained. This prefix is found in many nouns. It also enters into the formation of the Present and Future Roots of certain verbs. Ex. 可可以表示 NX-Ts'Ang, Inn; 可方式 Tong, Present Root, and 可方式 Tang, Future Root, of 可方式 Tong-wa, To send, dismiss.
- う Ďa. This prefix is of COMMON GENDER, and is met with before the following Initial letters, namely, 可 Ka, 可 Ġa, い Nga, む Pa, む Ba, and む Ma, and nine other letters which are merely compounds of these with Ya-tā', or Ra-tā'. It also enters into the formation of the Future Root of certain verbs. Ex. 与るい ヴ, Future Root of スラスン BÖ-WA. To offer; ラコン ĞAB, Future Root of スラスンン GEB-PA, To cover.
- This prefix is of MASCULINE GENDER, and occurs before the Initials  $\P$  Ka,  $\P$  Ga,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Cha,  $\mathfrak{E}$  Ja,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Nya,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Ta,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Da,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Na.  $\mathfrak{F}$  Tsa,  $\mathfrak{E}$  Dz'a.  $\mathfrak{F}$  Zhya,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Za,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Ra,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Sha,  $\mathfrak{F}$  Sa, and twenty-nine other letters, compounds of the foregoing, some having one or other of the different subjuncts, and some even one or other of the three different superposed letters. It is a very common prefix, and enters into the formation of the Perfect and Future Tenses of many verbs. Ex.  $\mathfrak{T}$  Kor, Perfect Root and Future Root of  $\mathfrak{T}$  Kor-wa, To Surround;  $\mathfrak{T}$  Zhyō, Perfect Root, and  $\mathfrak{T}$  Zhyō, Future Root of  $\mathfrak{T}$  Jo-wa, To milk.

- Ma. This prefix is of VERY FEMININE GENDER, and occurs before 下 Ka, 可 Ga, こ Nga, & Ch'a, E Ja, う Nya, 又 T'a, ち Ďa, ち Na, ま Ts'a, É Dz'a and four other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya-tā, or Ra-tā.
- 'A. This Prefix is of FEMININE GENDER, and is found before 下 K'a, 可 Ġa, ま Ch'a, こ Ja, ヹ T'a, ち Ďa, ヹ P'a, ロ Ba, ま Ts'a, こ Dz'a, and nine other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya-tā, or Ra-tā.

The raising-power (if any) of these prefixes, as regards Tone, depends upon their gender as mentioned above, the masculine prefix  $\mathbf{\nabla}^* Ba$  possessing the greatest power.

§ 14.—The following Tabular Statement of the consonants (in their simple form) which, as Initial Radical letters, take prefixes, and of the particular prefix or prefixes which, and which alone, each such consonant takes, may be found of use, especially in cases where the student feels some difficulty in determining whether any particular letter is or is not a prefix. For instance, no letter except  $\Sigma$  Da, or  $\Sigma$  Ba, immediately preceding a  $\Sigma$  Ka, can be a prefix; no letter except  $\Sigma$  Ma, or  $\Sigma$  A, immediately preceding a  $\Sigma$  Ka, can be a prefix; no letter except  $\Sigma$  and so on.

	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.	
M	5 8	বৃশ্ব স্থা Kar-po, White.	

Initial or Radical letter.	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
P	ठा	저도록 건 K'än-po, Abbot.
	ď	away.
피	5	্বার্ন ঐ a-wa, Joy, Happiness.
	7	বন্দ্র Ğē, Demon.
	স	মূর্ন্ $ ilde{G}o$ , Head.
	۹	ਕ੍ਰੀਕਾਸ <i>Gyē-wa</i> , To fall, Stumble.
<b>r</b>	5	รุฐฉ. ทัฐนี, Money, Silver.
	ह्य	মেনে: মাঁ Ngar-mo, Sweet.
ઢ	ना	স্ট্রা'ম' Chog-pa, To break (Transitive).
	7	지정되다 Chug-pa, To allow.
ಹ	হা	মঠ দ্বী Ch'o-to, Beak.
	વ	දැන් Ch'am, Masquerade.
E	7	ম্ভিন্ট্র Zi-দা', Glory, Splendour.
	ह्य	ম্হম'ন' Jä-wa, To meet.
	લ	ন্ট্ৰাহাম Jī-pa, To be afraid.
3	म	নাইন্ক্: Nyer-ts'ang, Pantry.
	7	ସ୍ଥିୟ ସଂ $Nyar{e}-wa$ , To ferment.
	হা	মাকুর মার্ মা Nyèn-sā'-pa, To rouse.
	1	

	Prefix or Prefixes	Example.	
letter.	taken.		
5	<b>4</b> 1	স্চম Tam, Rumour.	
	7	মূর্ট্রা Tōn-pa, To cast out.	
ঘ	হা	ଷସ୍କ T''ā, End.	
	લ	ন্ধুন'ন' T'ung-wa, To drink.	
5	ন	ন্র্	
,	7	กริ:รัเ De-po, Good, Well.	
ı	শ	ヌラス'Ď'ā, Arrow.	
	۾	বৃহ্যাম Dam-pa, To choose.	
द	ন	ম্ব্রিমা Nō'-pa, Injury.	
	7	지ト다. Nar-wa, To lengthen, Extend.	
	ম	ヌス・ N'ā, Oath.	
7	5	รุรเราั Pang-po, Witness.	
শ্ব	æ	ব্রথান P'è-wa, To increase.	
<b>A</b>	5	বুনাম Ü, Breath; বুদুশা Yar-ka, Summer.	
	۹	スワス・ロ・Bar-wa, To blaze up.	
ठ्य	1	্বমন্ ম Maģ-mi, Soldier.	
र्ह	ন	শ্র্ব হৈন্দ Tsang-po, River.	
	\bar{q}	จรีราคะ Tsön-K'ang, Prison, Jail.	

	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	${f Example}$ ,
<b>ಹ</b>	শ	ठाउँ Ts'o, Lake.
	۾	নু ক্রিল্মে Ts'ig'-pa, To burn (Intransitive).
É	Q	TEJ Dzün, Lie, Falsehood.
	31	মাইমাইন Dzē-po, Lovely.
	વ	קבריה Dzing-ra, Fortification.
स	None	
ঀ	ম	স্ব্রায় Źhyän-pa (pro. Źhyām-pa), Another.
	Image: section of the content of the	ব্ৰম্প্ৰন Nang-z'hyin, According to.
3	म्	নাৰুনামান্ত্ৰ Zū-po, Body.
	4	ਹੁੜੇ ਹਰ੍ਹਾਂ Z'oh-ta, Likeness.
Q	None.	
W	শ্	ਸ਼ਪਸ਼ Ya', or Yag, Bull, Yak.
<b>x</b>	<b>T</b>	지축·역· La-sha, Thigh.
ત્ય	None.	
٠9	म	বারীবারীবেরমে She-she tang-wa. To rebuke.
	D.	ସ-ମ୍ୟ' Shā'-pa, To tell.

Initial or Radical letter.	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.	
শ	E U	ন্মমেন্ট Sä-po, Bright, Clear. নিম্নিন্দ্রি Sō'-de kam-po, Misfortune.	
57 <b>US</b> I	None.		

#### NOTES.

- 2.—In the case of a two-letter syllable, whenever the second letter is qualified by a vowel-sign, or is otherwise complex, the first letter, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a Prefix.

  Ex.—机态 Ts'o, A lake; 지지하기 기자 TA-MI-SHI, Calamity.
- 4.—In the case of a syllable consisting of more than two letters, the first, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a Prefix. This is so whether the next letter is or is not simple.

Ex. QQQ'Q' (the Literary form of QQ'QC'Q') BAB-PA, To descend; AFA \( \tilde{A}'' \) K'AN-PO, Abbot; Q\( \tilde{A}'' \) Kö'PA, To create. Very rarely it is otherwise, as in the case of the 5' in the word \( \tilde{C}' \) THE RI-DA, Wild animal. Such words are often written with a wa-zur under the 5', to show that it is not a Prefix, but an Initial. Thus \( \tilde{C}' \) THE It is then still pronounced RI-DA.

5.—Should the Prefix be 5, and the Initial be simple 5, then I loses its b sound, and is pronounced w, or w as modified by the next letter, if any, such as 5 Na, A La, or N Sa (see Vowel Modifications, § 3). Should, however, the I be accompanied by (ya-tā), or any vowel-sign, it similarly loses its w sound, and takes that of the ya-tā or of the vowel-sign. Ex.—5II Not Bang, but Wang, Authority, Power; 5II WX, Pinnacle, Spire; 5II Yar, Summer: 5II Or, A place in Tibet; 5II On-Po, Nephew of a Lama. If the I be accompanied by (Ra-tā), it acquires the sound of d, i.e. palatal d (see § 6). Ex.—5I Da, Name of a Tibetan tribe; 5III Da' Interstice.

# § 15.—Peculiarities of Pronunciation.

মন্ত্রনার্টনা Сни-сні', pronounced Сниб-сні', Eleven.
মন্ত্র-মন্ত্রি Сни-źн্মা, pronounced Снив-źн্মা, Fourteen.

ጚ'ጚቜ RA-ž'ı, pronounced RAB-ž'ı, Drunk.

ላግ መደገ (Hon.) NA-Z'Ā, pronounced NAM-Z'Ā, Clock, Clothes.

মিন্দের K'A-CH'U, pronounced K'AM-CH'U, Law suit.

ఆహాద్యామ్ Ya-Ts'än-Po, pronounced Yam-Ts'äm-Po, Astonishing.

2.—The Prefixes 5 and 3 are never themselves carried back; but in the case of 3 and also of 5 the sound of n is sometimes substituted, and pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

মার্থিনি বিদ্যালয় T'o-চö', pronounced T'ön-চö', Ambition.

ই'ব্ৰুশ Mi-চঁu', pronounced Min-চঁu', Is not, are not.

5ๆ 35ุส์ (Hon.) ĞE-ชับท, pronounced Ğen-ชับท, Clergy.

ন্মেন্সুম (Hon.) Źнүй-рам, pronounced Źнүйн-рам, Cheek.

মূর্ব্বিম্মূর্বা Nön-Bē ṭā'-PA, pronounced Nöm-Bē ṭā'-PA,

To add.

হা স্বাব্

মী'মাব্দা Me-চa', pronounced Men-da', Ember.

3.—Even when the first syllable ends in  $\P$ , the same custom sometimes holds, probably because of the incomplete way in which final  $\P$  is uttered, the syllable therefore seeming to end in a vowel-sound. Ex.—

প্রসাম বুর্বালের (Hon.) Ch'ad-du', or Ch'a'-du', pronounced Ch'an-du', Knot.

4.--The sound of n is sometimes transmuted into that of m. Ex.—K'X' K'XN-PO, pronounced K'XM-PO, Abbot.

ম্ব্ৰিম্ব Yin-pa, pronounced Yim-pa, To be (copula).

মূর্ব্বিম্যুর্বা Nön-BE ță'-PA, pronounced Nom-BE ță'-PA,

To add.

স্প্রত্যে Zhyän-ра, pronounced Zhyäm-ра, Other.

5.—The sound of  $\mathbf{A}^*$  as final of first syllable is also sometimes changed into that of m. Ex.—

মানুমান্তমা (Hon.) Ğü-он'ам, pronounced Ğun-сн'ам, Catarrh.

শ্রুমান্তর্ক উপন্ন-Ts'an, pronounced Gyan-Ts'an, Banner of Victory.

6.—The sounds that are latent in superadded letters, sometimes result in audible sounds, pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

শৃষ্ট্ৰে (Hon.) Sö-dong, pronounced Sön-dong, Churn.

EZT J'A-BONG, pronounced J'An-BONG, Tea churn.

ਕਲੌ '' Ch'o-nga, pronounced Ch'ö-nga, Fifteen.

राउँ ५ देन Ch'ö'-Tèn, pronounced Ch'ön-Tèn, A monument containing the ashes of a saint or other relics.

হামপা SER-KA, pronounced SE-KA, Chink.

WT'N' YAR-LA, pronounced W'N' YA-LA, Above.

「大きな」、「大きな」、 MAR-HRANG-WA, pronounced MA-HRANG-NGA, Naked.

קאמי BAR-LA, pronounced BA-LA, Between.

5ξ' Ďur-ţ'ö', pronounced Ďu-ţ'ö', Cemetery.

STY 'UR-DA, pronounced U-DA, Noise.

รุกุราพัณ Kar-yö, pronounced Ka-yö, Earthen mug or cup.

\*\* TSAR, pronounced TSA, Margin

নাইন Ser, pronounced Se, Gold.

スጆሚ K'AR-NGA, pronounced K'A-NGA, Gong.

אָבּאָר SAR-PA, pronounced SA-PA, New.

- 8.—When the first of two syllables ends in a vowel-sound, and the next syllable consists of  $\nabla wa$ , the latter often takes the sound of a. Ex.—  $\nabla \nabla wa$ , pronounced Chu-A, Dung of cattle.
- 9.—The following is a common case of  $\square$  wa, or  $\square$  pa, being reduced to the sound of a:

マンス・ス・ス・ス・マゥ・wa-Rè pronounced Yaw-a-Rè'. Is, are, was, were (in the sense of possibly or probably being).

10.—When the first of two syllables ends in  $\mathbb{Q}^*$ , and the next syllable is  $\mathbb{Q}^*$  wa, the latter is often pronounced as  $\mathbb{R}^*$  ra, but sometimes it is reduced to a mere a. Ex.—

স্থাবাস্থান (Hon.) Jä-wa Nang-wa, pronounced Jä-ra Nang-nga, To meet.

র্মান্ত Yö-wa, pronounced Yöl-A, Curtain.

11.—The above are samples of irregularities with which one sometimes meets; practice alone will enable the student to know when other words similarly spelt follow these Colloquial customs, and when they ought to be pronounced according to the regular rules. The following are a few more specimens of irregular pronunciations:—

ম'র্মান' Ma-nyong, pronounced Ma-nyung, Never.

মুধা এমান্ট্রিব্রুব্য Sö she kyi bu', pronounced Sö shin-ái bu'.
Who knows?

To chat.

ইবিমা (Hon.) P'EB-PA, pronounced P'E-PA, To arrive, depart, come, go.

মনুবাম (Hon.) Žнүп-во, pronounced Žнүпм-во, Mattress.

ল্মান্স্না (Hon.) Zhyä-Ba', pronounced Zhyäm-Ba', Mask.

ਬੁੱਤੀ ਪ L'A-pi-PA, pronounced L'AB-Bi-PA, Painter.

মূর'মান্তা Mön-lam, pronounced Mö-lam, Prayer.

মুবম'মন্ত্র Kyab-gön, pronounced Kyam-gön, Helper, Protector, Saviour.

§ 16.—The ten Consonantal Affixes, called ENGENTS JEJU CHU, each of which, when following an Initial, simple or complex, completes the formation of a syllable.

Of these  $\P$ ,  $\Gamma$ ,  $\Pi$ , and  $\Pi$  are frequently seen with an additional silent  $\Pi$ , or Second Affix, called  $\Pi$   $\Pi$  Yang-Ju'. They are then called Double Affixes.

Another kind of DOUBLE AFFIXES is met with in old Tibetan books. It is very rare, but for Literary purposes the student may as well make a note of it. It consists of  $\nabla Na$ ,  $\nabla Ra$ , or  $\nabla La$ , followed by  $\nabla Da$ , here called  $\nabla \nabla T$ . DA-DA', Hard D. Thus:—

It is used to express the Past Tense. Ex:-

미지카 SAND-PA, He heard.

মূর্ব্বে Gyurd-pa, He became.

সাইনিস্মা Söld-Pa, He requested

The modern Literary practice, however, is to omit the final 5, which may be regarded as obsolete.

As to the pronunciation of the affixes T, T, T, T, S, see § 3, Tabular Statement of Vowel Modifications, and Notes thereto.

The DICTIONARY ORDER of the above-mentioned ten Consonantal Finals, and of the four Double Finals in 🖏, is as follows:—

1.	मा	• •	ģa.	8.	<b>고</b> 성.	••	<i>b̂а-sа.</i>
2,	피紅.	••	ģa-sa.	9.	হা.	• •	ma.
3.	۲.	••	nga.	10.	প্রধ্য.	• •	ma-s $a$ .
4.	다.	••	ng <b>a</b> -sa.	11.	۹٠	••	'a.
5.	5	••	da.	12.	₹'	••	ra.
6.	<b>ኝ</b>	••	na.	13.	ୟ'	• •	la.
7.	۵.	••	$\hat{b}a$ .	14.	ঝ'	••	sa.

The above, of course, is their order under each letter of the TA' KA-K'A; that is to say, it is their order after, or in subordination to, the Alphabetical Order, if that term may be used in connection with the TA

As to the Gender of the Ten Final Affixes, see § 19.

 $\widetilde{A}$   $\widetilde{G}$   $\widetilde{G}$   $\widetilde{A}$   $\widetilde{G}$   $\widetilde{G}$ 

EXAMPLES:--

1.—शुक्षःगुदार्विदाश्राश्रमादाश्रारेवार्ने ।

Sti-kyang k'ong-la lag-pa ma re'go: And no man laid hands on him.

In the Colloquial this would be:— शुश्राप्पदादित्यात्मनाः द्वानानाः (for ज्वानाः ) देदः or ज्वानाः श्रादा

Sử yang k'o-la lag-pa ma żhyagga (for źhyag-pa) rè' or żhyagma song.

2.—พื·**ॴू**भै'तुःकुंभ'र्ये द वे**द**्युदः दें।

In the Colloquial this might be:—

what a far a

**ॵॱ**পूॱऄ॔शॱक़ॗ॔ऀॺॱय़ॕॱॸॖॱॸऀॸॖॱॺॹॗऀॸॱऄ॔ॕॱ।

Yi-shā-yi bu gyā-po Da-wid j'ung ngo: Jesse's son was king David —Jesse begat David the king.

Yi-shāi bu gyā-po Da-wid yin: Jesse's son was King David.

Yi-shā-yī gyā-po Da-wid kyè'song: Jesse begat King David.

3.— मुँदि के विद्यार श्रीमा से**द**ें ।

Colloquially :— र्चित्रःत्रः के विः ब्रदः वः श्रेनाः श्रेन्। K'yō'-ts'ōi nang-na to' mè'-do: Ye have not life in yourselves.

K'yō'-rang-ts'ōi nang-la to' mè'.

4.—हिंद गुै-मु महिंद हैं।

K'yō' kyi bu sōn-no: Thy son liveth.

Colloquially :— च्चिर-रेदे-द्यु-मॉर्बिय-मीप्तर्नुमा।

K'yō' rei bu son-gyi du'.

5.—८'ग्-उ'र्पेर्-श्र'भ्रमहोत्रकेषुवचे।

Nga ga-ru yō'-sa la leb mi t'ub-bo: Where I am, ye cannot come. Colloquially: ---

or लूट.धु.बंच। ट.चे.त.लूट.श्र.बंच। Nga ga--pa yō'-sa la yong t'ub-kyi män, or yong mi t'ub.

5년 1 6.—씨도'도최'국'되'최국'-경취'다고 '최도'리고' Yang ngữ đe t'a-mai nyin par lang-war j'a-o: And I will raise him up at the last day.

Colloquially:-

लट.टश.टे.के.श.चिबेची.चूंश.ज.लट. जेची.लूट.। Yang ngữ đe nyi-ma źħyuġ-shỡ la yar kya' yong.

न्य-दर्गोद्यः शक्कृताः मी. श्रुचाशः दिस् दिः देः तः दिनुदः व्यक्षः स्यक्षः स्यक्तुं नाः स्युद्धः वाः दिनुदः व्यक्षः स्यक्तिं मी. श्रुचाशः दिस् दिः देः तः Kön-ch'o' gi t'ū'-t'o-wa de la nāpar gyur-ro: The wrath of God will abide on him.

Colloquially:—

५गोंब अर्केन मी नगद कर रे ता ( or मिंता ) ऑट मी रेर्। Kön-ch'o' gi k'ā-ch'ā' de la (or k'o la) yong-gi-rè'.

8.—अट्रांबट्रमीश्राट्यार्गोद्रश्रक्तायः नश्चेद्रमानुद्राद्वीश्राद्वीमारहेशः मास्ट्रह्माश्चार Yang k'ong gī nga-la kön-ch'o' la nyèn-kur j'ö shi' chē sung-so: Then said he unto me, worship God.

Colloquially:

दे.ब्रह्माम् देशादात्मान्त्राह्मान्यः क्रिक्ताम् वेद्याद्यान्यान्यः सक्त्यात्मान्यः चुद्या

De-nāt k'o-rē nga la kōn-ch'o' la mō-lam t'ob dag-ga-rang labj'ung.

9.—रे.वश.वश.लाम्पट.व.कंश.मोवय.वृत्ती. शर्वेट.तर.मीर.ट्रे। De nä nam k'' a na tä žhyän žhyi t'ong-war gyur-to: And there was seen another sign in heaven.

Colloquially:—

रे'ब्राब्रामाय या अर्जन मान्य De-nit nam-k''ā la yam-ts'ān zhvām-va chi' t'ong is त्र.कृषी.शर्यूट.चैंट.।

N.B. -5 is used only with the Literary Perfect root after final x, A, q' (for x5', A5', 45') |

The Full stop |, or ||, will henceforth be omitted. See Writing AND PUNCTUATION, § 20.

# § 18.—Colloquial Duplications.

As regards certain verbs in the Infinitive Mood, or in the Perfect tense of the Indicative Mood. i.e. verbs, the roots of which end in the final consonant n, na, c, ca, a, or s, the following custom obtains in the Colloquial. Instead of pronouncing in the ordinary way the particle I or I that follows the root, the speaker merely duplicates, or emphasizes with an added a sound, the final consonantalsound.

Thus, as regards the Infinitive Mood, instead of saying ভুলাখান্য (Hon.) Dog-Pa Nang-wa, the Colloquial speaker would say সুনানানার মে Dog-ga-nang-nga, To proclaim or publish.

So, too, as regards the Perfect Indicative, instead of saying মে'বন্ধুনাম'ন'থেবৈ' Ňgā þā or ḥāĠ-PA YIN, he would say মে'বন্ধুনাম'নাথেঁব NGA ÞAG-GA YIN, I proclaimed. I have proclaimed.

Other Examples are:—

지지 (for 다) 되었다. (Hon.) SE-LA (for WA) NANG-WA, or NANG-NGA: To absolve.

भै.चार्च्चाश.ग्रीश.श्राजाता ( for य.) चोबट. ( for य.) जूब. (Hon.) KUSHO KYI SE-LA (for WA) NANG-NGA (for WA) YIN; the master absolved or has absolved.

- দার্থ নিমানমামামা ( for না) দার্দানামার (Vulg.) Tso-wö sh-la (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin; The lord absolved or has absolved.
- ሻፒፕ (for ସ') ግላር ሀ' (Hon.) Nor-ra (for wa) Nang-nga, To err.
- अप्तानिकाणीक्षात्रेर र (for पा) मान्यार (for पा) भेन (Hon.) Kusho kyi nor ra (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin : or still better :—
- भु मिलिम् शामिश सुनाश देर मित्र ( for गं) or सुनाश देर पेर र ( for गं) धोद Ku-zhyō-kyt t'u nor nang-nga (for wa), or t'u nor shor-ra (for wa) yin, The master erred, or has erred.
- 다시 국자 (for 디') 회사 (Vulg.) NGA NOR-RA (for WA) YIN:

  I erred, I have erred.
- মূদেদে (for তা) প্রাকৃতিত (Hon.) Pong-nga (for wa) Nang-nga:

  To shun, To renounce.
- রিট্রেলি (for ম') সার্থেটে (for ম') ইই (Hon.) K'ong-রিট্রেলি (for মা) সার্থেটে (for মা) মই : He shunned, He has shunned.
- [마구시] 지자 (for 다) 국구 (Vulg.) K'o-RE PANG-NGA (for PA)
  RE': He shunned, He has shunned.

When the root ends in final A, the Colloquial sometimes resorts to a following K, instead of the Duplication as above. Ex.—

- বৃদ্যামান Gy E-wa, To stumble.
- 지미지도 (for 다) 되었다. (Hon.) ĞYE-RA (for WA) NANG-NGA:
  To stumble.
- RA (for WA) NANG-NGA (for PA) YIN: He stumbled, He has stumbled.

At the same time this were better phrased thus:-

(or ku dab) shob-ra (for WA) BE'. He has stumbled.

다 되었다. (for 기) 없다. (Vulg.) NGA GYE-RA (for WA) YIN:
I stumbled, I have stumbled.

As regards verbs the roots of which end in 5, or 5, or

See also  $\S$  15, 8, as to  $\P$  was changing into a after a vowel-sound.

# § 19.—THE TONE SYSTEM.

Tone is a very important factor, a fairly correct tone being almost more desirable than absolutely correct grammar; and there exist certain rules on the subject which should be carefully studied.

The TA KA-LI, or CONSONANTAL SERIES of the TA KA-K'A, is classified by Tibetan Grammarians under six heads, having reference to the respective Genders of the several letters.

These heads are:—

- 1. Ži P'o, Masculine.
- 2. ATT MA-NING, Common.
- 3. No, Feminine.
- 4. 955 FY SHIN-TU MO, Very Feminine.
- 5. มีๆ ๆ Mo-Sham, Sub-Feminine, or Barren
- 6. মার্ক্র্রাই Ts'an me', Neuter.

### MASCULINE LETTERS.

These are pronounced with a special emphasis, fullness, compactness, and distinctness, arising from a powerful use of the vocal organs. They never undergo any modifications in this respect, even when

guarded by Prefixes or Super-posed Letters, but always preserve intact their own natural sounds.

#### FEMININE AND VERY FEMININE LETTERS.

In pronouncing these the vocal organs are relaxed, and the phonetic body of the letter is not so much sent forth from the mouth, as suffered to emanate from it gently and gradually. These letters are subject to phonetic modification when guarded. For instance, the addition of Prefixed or Super-posed Letters has the effect of raising the Tonic Pitch, and softening the sound. Thus,  $\neg \neg \neg \neg$  Gang, is unguarded, and therefore, to an English ear, sounds very like Kang. But  $\neg \neg \neg \neg$  Gang, similarly pronounced like the Ga in Garland, and  $\neg \neg \neg$  Gang, similarly pronounced, are guarded, in the first case by a Prefix, and in the second by a Super-posed Letter, and therefore the sound is no longer hard and compact like the k sound of unguarded  $\neg \neg$ , but softer and exactly like the sound of the English hard g, and the tone is moreover raised, or brought to the Pitch-level of a Masculine Letter.

#### COMMON LETTERS.

The manner of pronouncing these differs only in degree from the way in which Maseuline and Feminine Letters are pronounced. That is, they are uttered less compactly and emphatically than the Masculine, and less softly than the Feminine Letters.

#### SUB-FEMININE OR BARREN LETTERS.

The pronunciation of these is also only a matter of degree as compared with the pronunciation of Feminine Letters.

#### NEUTER LETTER.

This has a hard and compact sound.

The following Tabular Statement will elucidate the above remarks:—

Letter.			Gender.	Pronunciation.		
ण र र र र र र	Ka Cha Ta Pa	}	Masculine	With distinctness, emphasis, fullness and compactness, effected by a special effort of the vocal organs.		
ति के के के के	Kʻa Chʻa Tʻa Pʻa Tsʻa Sha		Common	Not so compactly as the Masculine, and not so softly as the Feminine Letters.		
市地方市地市市市	Ga Ja Da Ďa B'a Dz'a Wa Zhya Za Ya		Feminine	A gentle and gradual emanation of the sound, rather than an emphatic and compact projection of it.		

Letter.		Gender.	Pronunciation.	
5° 5° 5° 5°	Nga Nya Na Ma	\\ \-\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	Very Feminine.	More gently and gradually than the Feminine.
£' a' 5' a'	Ra La Ha 'A	}	Sub-Feminine or Barren	Without effort.
R1.	Α	J	Neuter	Hard, from the base of the throat.

Even the Five Prefixes possess a gender of their own. Thus:— $\beta$  is Masculine, having been Feminine, as an Initial.

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \vec{A} & \dot{G}a \\ \vec{A} & \dot{D}a \end{array} \right\}$$
 are  $Common$ , having been  $Feminine$ , as Initials.

- A' 'A is Feminine, having been Barren, as an Initial.
- No is Very Feminine, unaltered.
- So, too, the Ten Final Affixes have the following genders:-
- প্ৰ, Masculine, having been Feminine as an Initial, and Common as a Prefix.
- $5^{\circ}$  Da, Ditto.
- J' Ba, Ditto, having been Feminine as an Initial, and Masculine as a Prefix.

N Sa, Masculine, having been Common as an Initial.

ሻ Na, Common, having been Very Feminine as an Initial.

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} \mathbf{x}^* \ Ra \\ \mathbf{a}^* \ La \end{array}\right\}$$
 Ditto, having been Barren as Initials.

$$abla^* Nga$$
Feminine, having been Very Feminine as Initials, and  $abla^* Ma$ 
Solution Feminine, as a Prefix.

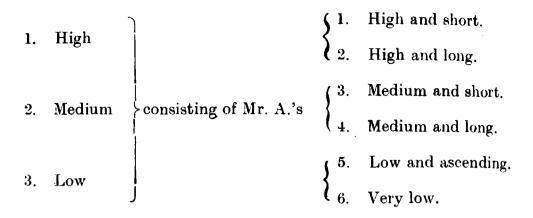
A, Feminine, having been Barren as an Initial, and Feminine as a Prefix.

Thus, the only Letter which undergoes no change in gender, whether as Initial, Prefix, or Final Affix, is 51 Ma.

In his PRIMER OF STANDARD TIBETAN the Revd. Mr. Edward Amundsen, when dealing with the Tone system, gives prominence to the Pitch and Length, rather than to the Compactness, Emphasis, and Distinctness of the tone. His classification may be represented thus:—

ा. मा. इ. २. स. २.	High and short.
2. <b>र्ड. न. श</b> .	High and long.
3. ਸਾ ਨ <b>ਝ ਖ</b> ਨੰ	Medium and short.
4. C' 3' 4' A' CH' T' W'	Medium and long.
5. 제 E 두 두 지 분 역 표 Q W	{ Descending but re-ascending and long.
6. A.	Very low and long.

We have seen that the Length or Shortness of the Tone is governed by rules of its own (see § 3): hence we need not consider it here in connection with Pitch. So far, therefore, as Pitch alone is concerned, Mr. Amundsen's system may be reduced to only three classifications, namely:—



Now, if, instead of regarding this question of Tone from the point of view of Pitch, we regard it from that of emphasis, fullness, compactness and distinctness, we shall find that the subject again arranges itself under three heads namely, utterances that are very compact and full, those that are only moderately so, and those that are soft and gradual emanations.

beginning with the MASCULINE INITIALS  $\P$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , should be pronounced compactly and fully, and in a high key; (2) words beginning with the Common Initials  $\P$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , should be pronounced with moderate emphasis and in a moderately high key; (3) while words beginning with the Feminine Initials  $\P$ ,  $\Xi$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , or with the Very Feminine Initials.  $\Xi$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , or with the Barren Initials  $\Xi$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , or with the Neuter Initial  $\Im$ , should be pronounced softly and in a low key. It should also be remembered that when an Initial has a Prefix, or a Surmounting Letter, the utterance according to these three rules is somewhat intensified as regards MASCULINE and COMMON INITIALS, and heightened and rendered more compact as regards all the others.

To honour; TICT DONG-WA (for TICT DANG-WA, Cold), but จุรัฐธาร Dong-wa, To count, and จุรัฐธาร Dong-wa, To die; (2) in the formation of the tenses of verbs, as already explained (§ 13); and (3) to effect changes in the pronunciation of Initial Letters. Thus T, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like K in English; but, when prefixed by 5, 5, or 5, it is pronounced like hard 6 in English Again 5, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like P in English; but when prefixed by  $\mathbf{5}$ , it is pronounced as W, when unqualified by any vowel-sound, and as the vowel-sound only, when so qualified; or, if prefixed by 3, it takes the sound of B in English. Again, as regards 5, see § 13. Again,  $\mathbf{5}$ , as an Initial, is pronounced as a dental T; but if prefixed by  $\P$ ,  $\P$ , or  $\P$ , it takes the sound of a dental P. Again,  $\P$ and £, when Initials, are pronounced with a slight aspirate; but, when prefixed by \\mathbb{I}, \operatorum, or \\\mathbb{Q}, they lose the aspirate. Again \(\mathbb{Z}\), as an Initial, is pronounced almost like S in English; but, when prefixed by  $\neg$  or  $\neg$ , it is pronounced like Z in English. Lastly,  $\bigcirc$ , as an Initial, is pronounced almost like shya; but, prefixed by  $\P$  or  $\P$ , it takes the sound of zhya.

## § 20.—Writing and Punctuation.

Originally, Tibetan was a monosyllabic language. Nowadays, however, its words are mostly dissyllabic. There is no attempt in the written or printed language to divide off words from one another, either by spacing or by punctuation. Hence, they all succeed and seem to run into each other in one continuous line, and the reader's knowledge is all that enables him to recognize them individually. It is otherwise, however, with syllables. A syllable may consist of a single consonant simple or complex, or of two or more such consonants, silent or pronounced. But, be its consonantal structure what it may, the whole collocation of letters possesses only one vowel-sound, inherent or expressed by vowel-signs. Every such collocation or syllable must be marked off

from its successor by a dot ( ') placed at the right-hand top corner of the This dot is called 57 Ts'E'. To mark the terminafinal consonant. tion of clauses such as those for which we generally use a comma, a semi-colon, or a colon, another sign is used in the shape of a vertical stroke (), called JL'95 KYANG-SHA'. Whenever this sign is used, the Last consonant is omitted, except in the case of final C' nga, which always retains it. A double vertical stroke (||), called ንጻነ-95' Nyi-Sha', is used where we would use a full stop. At the end of a paragraph, or of a chapter, a fourfold vertical stroke ( |||| ), called קב באלי Zhyi-Sha', is placed. Instead of the four plain strokes the Instead of the two plain strokes the following, j j. Instead of the one plain stroke the following, j. In some books the comma is seen thus, \( \). Sometimes the dot (') or \( \) is seen \( \), and sometimes even larger, 6. In Book-letter and in Running-hand the FT is seen thus, c.

At the commencement of printed and written matter symbols like the following may often be seen:—

This is called Swasti or the Auspicious Benediction. It may begin any work dealing with Ethics and Morality. The top figures are the Double Flame, or Radiance, the next are the Double Gem, and the lowest are the Double Lotus. On the right is 38.451

TRIPLE DITTO, for writings on Philosophy and Theology:

RADIANCE, GEM, TRIPLE LOTUS, and STALK. Beginning chapters in Religious works.

LOTUS and STALK. Used with official correspondence, proverbs, maxims, etc., to indicate a fresh beginning.

#### ORDINARY BLOCK PRINT.

The proper method of writing this is first to make the thick horizontal stroke at the top of each letter, and then the rest of the character, working from left to right as in English, and adding the Ya-tas, Ra-tas, and vowel-signs last. The straight vertical strokes should be long, fairly thick at the top, and tapering to the bottom.

In writing  $\mathfrak{A}$ , the vertical stroke on the left may first be made downwards, and then the rest, never omitting clearly to define the loop in the centre. Or, a horizontal stroke may first be made, then the vertical stroke on the left downwards, and then the remainder, from the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke. The down-stroke from the loop must be long, quite vertical, and tapering, otherwise the beginner is apt to produce something which might be mistaken for  $\mathfrak{A}$ , which has no central loop, and whose final down-stroke is short, and instead of being vertical slopes off to the right.

Other letters which the beginner is apt to mix up with each other when attempting to write them, are  $\Gamma$  Nga,  $\Gamma$  Ta, and  $\Gamma$  Da. The down-strokes in nga and da begin at or near the right end of the horizontal line, and curve well to the left, whereas the down-stroke of Ta begins at the left end of the horizontal line, and comes straight down, or even with a slight slant to the right. The final stroke of nga is short and thick, while those of Ta and Da are long and tapering. Ta's final down-stroke, moreover, takes a bend to the left, while that of Da bears well to the right. Both, too, are brought well down, whereas Nga's final stroke is stunted.

In writing  $\mathcal{A}$  the little stroke on the left should first be made, then the thin stroke next to it, then the top horizontal stroke and undercircle, and finally the long vertical down-stroke.

T may be written by first making the top horizontal stroke, then the whole left side of the letter, and finally the vertical down-stroke on the right. Or, after the horizontal stroke, first the little curved stroke in the top left-hand corner, then a straight diagonal line from

right to left downwards, and finally the vertical stroke on the right downwards.

In writing letters like 5 and 5, the down-stroke containing the loop is usually commenced from near the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke.

The vertical stroke of 5' should project down slightly beyond the point of junction with the curve on the right.

- First the horizontal, then the thin curving down-stroke, beginning it from the centre of the horizontal, and lastly the thick curving stroke on the right, the top end of which should meet the thin down-stroke a little below the letter's junction with the horizontal. Or thus,  $\mathcal{C}$ , that is, first the horizontal stroke, then the short down stroke, and lastly the curving stroke, somewhat after the way we write the figure five.
- First the horizontal, next from the centre of that stroke the down-stroke, then the loop on the left, working upwards, and then by carrying on the pen, the loop on the right working downwards.
- H' First make an A' That is to say, a vertical down-stroke, then the rest of the figure. Lastly make a straight down-stroke, meeting the end of A' A' has no loop.
- First the dot, or thick short stroke on the left at the top, then the half circle to the right, then the thick short stroke slanting from left to right, and finally the long hook. Or else, first a horizontal stroke, then the dot or short thick stroke on the left at the top and then the rest as stated.
- First the horizontal, then from its centre or from near its right-hand end the short thin lines loping downward to the left, then the hook with the tail brought up level with but clear of the horizontal stroke; next, from near the top of the second stroke a straight or curving line downwards with a slant to the right; and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

W First a short horizontal, then a sort of U with another horizontal over the right-hand limb, then the stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke. Or, first two parallel vertical strokes of equal length, with a horizontal on each, then another parallel vertical stroke a little longer than the others. Then join the first two with an under-curved stroke; and lastly, with a slanting stroke from left to right, join the second and third vertical strokes, at the bottom. The first way is the better.

First write an elongated Q, thus Q, and then add the bar across the middle.

Or first write an ordinary A, and then subjoin a W without its horizontal stroke.—Thus A

First a short horizontal, then the thin short down-stroke, slanting to the left, then the thick stroke up the end of it, slanting to the right. Then, from near the top of the second stroke, make the long down-stroke, sloping to the right, and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

First a horizontal, then the short thin down-stroke from near the right-hand end of the horizontal, and slanting to the left, then the thick stroke at the bottom, beginning it from well to the left of the down-stroke and carrying it boldly across the end of the latter, with a good sweep to the right and with a downward trend.

In making  $\mathfrak{I}$  the beginner should see that he does not make it look like  $\mathfrak{I}$ .

Then from near the left-hand end a thin downward stroke slanting to the left, then a thick downward-stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke, commencing it from the right-hand end of the horizontal.

Then to the first half of it

subjoin a small  $\Sigma$  without its horizontal. Then, from the right-hand end of the horizontal, make the long vertical down-stroke.

This is the same as I reversed.

Then the two little strokes, and finally. the long vertical down-stroke.

### BOOK-LETTER and RUNNING-HAND.

These are very much alike, the Running Hand, however, being the more difficult of the two to read and write. Specimens of both, in all possible combinations, are given in Csoma de Körös's Grammar (1834).

## § 21.—Spelling.

Tibetan spelling may be described as a cumulative process, one only of the component parts of a syllable being taken up at a time. Next, the sound so taken up is repeated, but with the addition in advance, or by way of assumption, of the second component part. Then this second component part is pronounced by itself. Finally, the phonetic effect of all that has thus been taken up is pronounced together, and that effect represents the literal expression of the syllable.

A knowledge of how to spell is most useful, and it is quite worth the student's while to take the trouble to acquire it.

The following examples are intended to exhibit the process progressively, through most of the stages from simple to complex syllables:—

## I.—Simple Consonants.

m (for example), and one final affix.

नाना Ka, Kag-ga, Ka'.

ጣር Ka, Kang-nga, Kang.

**Т**5 Ka, Kä'-da, Kä'.

ηδ' Ka, Kän-na,  $K\ddot{a}n$ .

та Ka, Kä-la, Kä.

ጣጻነ Ka, Kä-sa, Kä.

Π.—Consonant and Double Affix.

নামে Ga, Gang-nga-sa, Gang.

四天心 K'a, K'am-ma-sa, K'am.

内部 K'a, K'am-ma (Lä'-kor)-sa, K'am.

III.—Consonant with Prefix and Affix.

**5ης** Da-wo: Ka, K'ā-'ā, K'ā.

মান্ত Ma-wo: K'a, K''ā-'a, K''ā.

IV. -Consonant and Single Vowel-sign.

η Ka, gi-gu, Ki.

 $\mathfrak{J}$  Ka, zhyab-kyu, Ku.

η Ka, deng-bu, Ke.

Ka, na-ro, Ko.

V.—Consonant with double Vowel-sign and Subjunct.

ម៉ឺ Ga, na-ro, go; 'ā, na-ro, oû; Goû.

VI.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Affix.

Μ̄ς Ka, na-ro, ko; kong, nga, Kong.

35. Ra, deng-bu, re; rè'-da, Rè'.

VII.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

মিনামা K'a, na-ro, K'o; k'om, ma, sa, K'om.

VIII.—Reversed Letters.

ቸው Ta-log-Ta; Tam-ma (Lä'-kor) Tam; k'a; Tam-k'a.

ブスラ Ďa-log-Da; ma; Ra, zhyab-kyu, Ru; Da-ma-ru.

IX.—Ya-tās.

J' Ka, Ya-tā, Kya.

5 Pa, Ya-tā, Cha.

 $\mathbf{Z}^{\bullet}$  P'a, Ya-tā, Ch'a.

5 Ba, Ya-tā, J'a.

列 Ma, Ya-tā, Nya.

X.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign.

📆 Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi.

XI.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Affix.

🃆 🕷 Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kvī, sa, kyi.

XII.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

Ba, sa, k'yeb, ba, sa, k'yeb.

XIII.—Ya-tā with Prefix and Affix.

ዃጛጙ Ďa-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kyar, ra, kyar.

55 Å Da-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; chä, la, chä.

XIV.—Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Affix.

ຽງື່າ Da-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, gi-gu, kyi; kyī-la, kyī.

ŠŠ
Ďa-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; cha, na-ro, cho; chö', da,
chō'.

XV.—Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Double Affix.

স্ট্রাম্য Ba-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, gi-gu, kyi; kyi, ga-sa, kyī.

XVI.—Ya-tā and Affix, each with Vowel-sign.

 $\mathfrak{P}_{\mathfrak{S}}$  K'a, ya-tā, k'ya; k'ya, deng-bu, k'ye; 'ā, źhyab-kyu, 'u; k'ye-'u.

### XVII.—Ra-tās and Ha-tās.

Spelt like ya-tas, but the following would be new:-

Πατική Βα, bän, na, bän; da, ha-tā, d'ā; d'ā, źhyab-kyu, d'ū; ka; Bān-d'ū-kā.

Ba, ha-tā, b'ā; b'ā, ra-tā, br'ā; br'ā, zhyab-kyu, br'ū; br'um, ma, br'ūm; ha, ra-tā, hra; hra, ģi-ģu, hri; Br'ūm-hri.

#### XVIII.—La-tās.

石 Ka, 石 Ga, 石 Ga, 日 Ba, la-tā, La. Ra, Sa, Za, la-tā, Da.

লুনা Ka, la-tā, la; la, na-ro, lo; loģ-ģa, Lo'.

## XIX. -- Wa-żurs.

र्द्धा Ts'a, wa-źur, ts'ā; k'a, źhyab-kyu, k'u; k'uģ, ga, k'u': Ts'ā-k'u'.

প্রেই Żhya, wa-żur, żhyā; ma, na-ro, mo; żhya-mo.

Ba, na-ro, bo; da, ha-tā, d'ā; d'ā, gi-gu, d'ī; sa; ta, wa-zur, tâ: Bo-dī-sa-tâ.

XX. Ra-gos, La-gos, and Sa-gos.

 $\overline{\eta}$  Ra, ka-tā, Ka.

ন Ra, ga-tā, Ğ'a.

Ra, nga-tā, Nga.

La, ka-tā, Ka.

La, ga-tā, Ğa.

일' La, nga-tā, *Nga*.

Sa, ka-tā, Ka.

Sa, ga-tā, Ğa.

 $\S$ ' Sa, nga-tā,  $lap{N}ga$ .

In spelling, the Prefix is taken first, then the surmounting letter, then the ya- $t\bar{a}$ , or ra- $t\bar{a}$ , or other subjunct, then the vowel, then the affix or affixes. Thus:—

Ba-wo: Sa, ga-tā, ga; ga, ra-tā, da; da, zhyab-kyu, du; dung, nga, sa, Dung.

### XXI. Miscellaneous Examples.

Pa, päṇ, ṇa, päṇ; ch'a, ḍeng-bu, ch'e; ch'én; na, ch'èn; ra, gi-gu, ri; rin, na, rin; pa na-ro, po; ch'a, ḍeng-bu, ch'e: Päṇ-ch'én, RIN-PO-CH'E, The Grand Lama of Tashī L'ümpo in Tsang, usually called the Tashī Lama, and an incarnation of 'Ö'-paġ-mè'.

'A, na-ro, 'o; 'ö', da, 'ö'; da-wo; pa, pag, ga, pag; ma, deng-bu, me; mè', da, mè': 'Ö'-PAG-MÈ', Buddha Amitabha, or Boundless Light.

ጉግሮች ፕሬክ Ta; La; 'ā, ģi-ģu, 'ī; laī; Ba, la-tā, la; ma:

TA-LAI LA-MA, The Dalai Lama, or Spiritual

Head of Tibet until Sir Frank Younghusband's

entry into Lhassa.

ዓመር ነው 'A-wo; ba, ra-tā, ḍa; ḍā, sa, ḍā; la, ja-tā, ja;

ja, na-ro, jo; jong, nga, sa, jong: Ďx-jong (pronounced Ďxn-jong), Sikkim.

Ra, da-tā, da; da, na-ro, do; ra, ja-tā, Ja; Ja-dengbu, Je; ga, la-tā, la; la, ģi-ģu, li; ling, nga, ling: Do-Je-Ling, or Dor-Je-Ling, Darjeeling, or the Place of Ecclesiastical Sway; literally the Place of the Sovereign Stone.

ሽኝ ነጻና Ba, na-ro, bo; bö', da, bö'; sa, ka-tā, ka; Kä', da, Kä': Bö'-κä', Language of Tibet.

## $\S~22.$ —Transliteration.

For the system adopted in this work of transliterating Tibetan words into Romanized Equivalents see § 2.

The best method, no doubt, is the one that was adopted at the Vienna Congress of Orientalists, and which may be found exemplified in Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's TIBETAN-ENGLISH DICTIONARY. By that system each letter in a Tibetan word is transliterated, but a line is drawn under every letter that is not pronounced, or it is distinguished by special type from the letters that are pronounced. It is not adopted in this work, as it is really only necessary for purposes of scientific precision.

 $\S~23.$ —Use of the Tibetan Dictionary.

The following appears to be the way in which the words in a Tibetan Dictionary ( T'SIG-DZÖ') are arranged.

1.—According to the order of the TA' KA-LI, or Consonantal Series of the TA' KA-K'A, regarded as *Initials*, or as they are sometimes called, *Root letters*, with the inherent vowel-sound of WA. The first thing, therefore, that the student has to do, when he wants to look up a word, is to ascertain what its Initial letter is.

Then the words under each consonant, beginning for instance with  $abla^* Ka$ , are arranged thus:—

- 2.—The simple consonant, e.g.  $\eta$
- 3.—The simple consonant with subjuncts like  $\mathbf{R}^{\bullet}$  ' $\bar{a}$ , wa-zur, or  $\mathbf{R}^{\bullet}$  Sha-log-K'a—e.g.  $\mathbf{R}^{\bullet}\mathbf{R}^{\bullet}$  Lā-wa, Woollen Blanket.
- 4.—The simple consonant with affixes, single and double, for the order of which as amongst themselves, see § 16.

  Then the same with subjuncts.
- 5.—Next, according to the foregoing order as regards their consonants, words qualified by the vowel-signs gi-gu, fi-gu, fi
- 6.—Simple consonant qualified by ya-tā alone.
- 7.—Ya-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 8.—Simple consonant qualified by  $\sim$  Ra-tā alone.
- 9.—Ra-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 10.—Simple consonant qualified by 5 Ha-tā alone.
- 11.—Ha-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 12.—Simple consonant qualified by la-tā alone.
- 13.—La-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 14.—Foreign or other special words formed with the Reversed letters.
- 15.—Words with the Prefixes  $\P$ ,  $\P$ ,  $\P$ ,  $\P$ , and  $\P$ , in that sequence, and each sequence arranged according to the foregoing orders.
- 16.—Consonant qualified by Ra-go.
- 17.—Ra-ğo words according to foregoing orders.
- 18.—Consonant qualified by La-go.
- 19.—La-go words according to foregoing orders.
- 20.—Consonant qualified by Sa-ğo.
- 21.—Sa-go words according to foregoing orders.
- posed letter like  $\preceq$  or  $\preceq$ , need be looked for under  $\preceq$  La. They will only be found under the head of the Superposed letter.

Words in A La, however, are found with qualifying vowel-signs, and such words may be looked for under A La.

N.B.—Csoma de Körös's Dictionary is differently arranged.

§ 24.—Indicative and Differentiating Particles.

Ma. Used both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial, and may have any of the following meanings, namely: The, All. Both, Together, The very, Just, Exactly, etc. Ex.:— 気気で The Spring; The Summer; 気気で The Autumn; 気気で The Winter. Sometimes, in this connection, 下 is seen instead of 可り

মাইমানা Both, The two together; মাধ্বমানা All three, The three together. In this connection 3 sometimes replaces শা

う何 The very, That very; 予何言、 Just so; 予何敬与 (as a reply) Yes, exactly, precisely, to be sure.

K'a. When this particle is used, it is generally found attached to Literary words ending in  $\P$ ,  $\P$ , and  $\P$ , and to Colloquial words ending in  $\P$ , or  $\P$ 

Ex.: — 독대 (properly 독대) Appetite; 페디티 (properly 페디티데) Number, Enumeration.

Also sometimes used instead of  $\eta$  as above explained.

T also indicates the top, upper surface, or front of anything

- inanimate. Ex.:— 四 or 四項黃子 Lid; 黑口口 Ridge, or Summit of a hill; 四口 Top, or head of a mountain, or pass; 只可口 Head of cliff.
- 장 Ch'a. Apart from its meanings as a word by itself, this Particle is often seen added to roots. Ex.:— 짓막장 (Literary), or 지장 (Colloquial), Echo; 취기장 Conversation; 취기장 Negotiations.
- - 2.—When added to all Cardinal Numbers except স্ট্রন One, it forms the Ordinal Numbers. Thus, স্ট্রন Two, but স্ট্রন সংগ্রহণ Second.
  - 3.—It is used also in connection with other enumerational expressions. Ex.:— క్రిస్-ఫ్-ఫ్ the గ్రామ్ or consonantal series of 30

letters; द्याना त्रेशादा A two-year-old boy; प्रानादा Measuring a cubit.

The last example shows that  $\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$ , added to a root, and helped out by the auxiliary  $\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$  To be, goes to form the Perfect Indicative Tense.

- 5.—气 is also used to distinguish the different meanings of homonymous roots. Ex.:— 有に Marrow, but 有にな Foot.
- Po. Indicates an agent. It is then sometimes, e.g. when annexed to the Infinitive, preceded by 口 pa. Thus, 可知识 A or the hearer.

It also expresses the idea of the Definite or Indefinite Article

in connection with Noun Substantives. Ex.  $\overline{\lambda}$   $\overline{\lambda}$  A or the eye;  $\overline{\lambda}$   $\overline{\lambda}$  A or the country;  $\overline{\lambda}$   $\overline{\lambda}$  A or the tree, or piece of wood:  $\overline{\lambda}$   $\overline{\lambda}$  A or the road;  $\overline{\lambda}$   $\overline{\lambda}$  A or the poor.

Used with numerals it also performs the functions of the Definite Article, or of the word aforesaid. Ex.:— 되었다고 The three to gether.

- 전 P'o. An affixed or prefixed particle, signifying Male, or paternal.

  Ex.:— 및 전 Cock-bird; 인전 Male fox; 전 되었지 Bull Yak; 전통 Dog.
- P' Wa. The form assumed by 지 when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in で, ス, て or ス In many noun-substantives, however, its place is taken by 지 Ex.:— マスス An oriental; 没てる Valley; 以れる A provincial or rustic; 적気で、 A frontiers-man.
- 南, or Wo. The form assumed by 河 when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in 口, 叫, 耳 or 只 Ex.:—表河 A river; 知知河 or 東河 Thumb; 万円尺 Brave.
- Ex.:— 3. Non; An immovable particle after various roots of substantives.

  Ex.:— 3. Non; An immovable particle after various roots of substantives.

  Ex.:— 3. Non; Anni Monk; Ann
- Feminine Gender. Ex.:— Box or Fig. Bitch. But not always.

  Ex.:— KN N Music; KN Top-point.

Attached to adjectives, it does not always indicate gender. Ex. কর্নী Great; মিদ্মানি Good, fine.

- ₹ Tsa. A differentiating particle. Ex.:— ५००० A steep declivity, but ५००० द A staircase.
- 表 Tse. A point, top, or edge. Also, however, an affix of Chinese origin. Ex.:— 与可可语 Polish, lustre, brilliant to a point or degree; dazzling; 以说 Aduck; 至文表 Abrass coin; 河口说 Tibetan name of Confucius.
- 3. Ni. See § 27, 2, on the Definite Article.
- Indicate the Definite or Indefinite Article, but are not much met with. Ex.:— The or an egg; NGT The or a lion; The deep.

 $\mathcal{T}$  Ku.

 $\mathbf{F}^{\mathbf{r}}$   $K^{\mathbf{r}}u$ 

 $rac{1}{2}$  Gu.

5. Ngu.

δ' Nu.

 $\mathfrak{S}^{\bullet}$  Bu, Wu.

 $\mathbf{z}^* Ru$ .

A. Lu.

 $\mathfrak{Z}$  'u

Definite or indefinite and diminutive particles. Apparently a re-duplication in (zhyab-kyu) of the final letter of the root. Ex.:— \$55 A or the mite; \$757 (357) A or the child; \$755 A or the youth. But not always. Ex.:— \$75 A or the mannikin; \$755 A or the little drop.

 $\S~25$ .—The Cases and their Signs.

(N.B.—The student is advised to glance at the paragraphs and conjugations relating to the verb To Be. See post.)

The various relations in which a Tibetan Noun and Pronoun may stand to some other word in the sentence are nearly all expressed by

means of divers monosyllabic primitive particles, and words compounded therewith, which perform the same functions as are performed by English Prepositions, but which, save for sundry Vocative Signs, are all Postpositional. These relations or cases are as follow:—

### I.—THE NOMINATIVE CASE.

Except in connection with Intransitive Verbs (Active; Neuter or Inactive; and Inceptive, i.e., implying a beginning or change of state), and also with the verbs  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$   $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$   $T_0$  be (the mere copula which is used attributively);  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$  or  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$  its negative form;  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$   $T_0$  be, to exist, to be present;  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$  its negative form;  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}_{\overline{\bullet}}$  its emphatic or intensive form (hardly ever used), and one or two other forms of the verb  $T_0$  be used in Literary Tibetan; there is practically no such thing in Tibetan as a verb governed by the Nominative Case. The following is an instance in which, though the practice is irregular, it is allowable and common in the Colloquial to use the Nominative in the usual European way:—

Will you drink tea?

The more correct way would be :—

The more correct way would be in the mor

Honorifically:--

The subject, however, is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where, though the verb is Transitive, it is also Passive:—

In such cases Q' la is optional, and may be omitted if desired.

The subject is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where the verbs are Intransitive (active, neuter, or inceptive):—

दृत्तुं नानिः त्रुन्। द्वनुः नानिः त्रुन्। इतः यायवः गुः त्रुन्। कैः सः नरः नीः त्रुन्। द्वनुः कृषा कृष्टिः गुः त्रुन्। द्वनुः कृषा कृष्टिः गुः त्रुन्।

The horses run.

I am going down to the bazaar.

It is raining.

The sun shines.

The child sleeps.

The child wakes, or breaks from slumber.

Where, however, the verb is transitive, the Nominative Case is never used, but always the Agentive Case. See § 25, VI.

### II.—THE VOCATIVE CASE.

There is practically no Vocative Case, but several polite expressions are often used by way of assent, dissent, or address. The commonest is ANN LA, and its variants.

# III.—The Objective or Accusative Case.

This is the same as the Nominative, with or without A LA, signifying As regards. Ex.:—

নিমানু রে' (মা) ব্রমমানি বুলা He loves the girl. Literally, By
him, as regards the girl. a loving
is.

Do not forget me.

IV.—GENITIVE CASE.

The signs are:—

নি GI. used after words ending with না, or C

To Kyi, used after words ending with 5, 5, or N, or in the Colloquial after 35 Di, This.

N.B. n', n', and n' may all alike be pronounced GI in conversation.

## 1.—Possessive Aspect.

When the word to which the sign is annexed is in that part of the sentence which contains the subject, it should precede the chief substantive of the subject. Ex.:—

भू अते अत् न्याना अके अं दा ति नुना । The fame of Lhassa is great.

गुद्धान् निर्मा न

# $2. \textcolor{red}{\textbf{--}Qualificative} \hspace{0.2cm} Aspect.$

When the word to which the sign is annexed is indicative of some quality, it may be regarded as an adjective; but, unlike Tibetan adjectives in general, it should *precede* whatever it qualifies. Ex.:—

N.B.—The particle ਨੇ Ni (see § 27, 2) has the effect of singling out and laying stress on the word ਨੇਂਟ੍ਰਿਪ੍ਰਸ਼ Bö'-yü, Tibet. This

English word TIBET seems to have originated from some phrase such as 3.5% DI-BÖD, whence Ti-böt = TIBET; for, to a European (i.e., Continental, e.g. German) ear the sound of 5 is very like t.

As to the adjectival use of the Genitive case-sign, see also § 30, I, (vi).

# 3.—Purposive Aspect.

श्रेश्-मी.स्रम।

For medicine the box, The medicine box.

গ্ৰাম্নানালে, For tobacco a bay—A tobacco better still, simply প্রাম্না pouch.

7547म्म।

Money-bag.

इस्मिन।

A leather bag for dry barley flour.

#### V.—THE DATIVE CASE.

1.—The only genuine Dative sign is A LA, which should be used in this sense after verbs of giving, shewing, speaking or telling, and teaching, and some others.

Ex.:-

दशार्हित् त्यान्यो करो होराष्ट्री प्येत्।

I will give you the book.

दानेन or वहने हुट. or वर्म। तानुरे or वहने हुट. or वर्म।

My syce showed him the way.

श्च.पं.पूर्वा.पर.२८.।

Tell the man to come.

चर्षियःलूटः। च्रिटःच्रीशाम्तः क्र्.जाम्प्र-प्रीःक्रशःचित्रशः

He will teach them his (religious) law.

ब्रेर्-गुरु-मुर्खन्यः (for यः) श्रेद्ध्यः ।

Did you tell the servant not to go?

2.—When the verb To be is used impersonally; for instance, in sentences intended to be the equivalent of English sentences beginning with the phrases, There is, There was, There has been, Tibetan requires that the word to which A' LA, when used, is annexed, should precede the chief substantive of the subject. With regard to the idiom for expressing the verb To have, Tibetans use the verb \(\tilde{\mathbb{U}}\mathbf{T}' \tilde{\mathbb{U}}\) YO'-PA, To be present, To exist, in connection with the Dative in A' LA, after the manner of the Russians when the latter, instead of saying YA IMEYO, I have, say U MENYA YEST, To me is, or To me there is. Ex:—

If the speaker has some uncertainty regarding the fact to which he is speaking, he will use the verb 95% instead of 5%. Thus:—

There is (I am almost sure) snow on that hill-top.

If he is not at all sure, but is only hazarding the statement, he will use the phrase w5th Yö-PA-RE', pronounced YAW-A-RE', instead of either w5th or 955, or he may even use w5th Youg. Thus:—

रे हिन्दे प्रमाम्सर्भेर्य रेंद्र There is (I understand) snow on that hill-top.

When There is, There was, etc., is used indefinitely, Wic Yong, Will be, takes the place of the above, much as the future is employed by a Highlander in Scotland to express the present tense. Thus:—

ALTINE!

There are (I expect), or There will be, very many trees in that valley down there.

3.—The following examples also illustrate the verb To have:—
মন্দ্রিকাম্প্র

মনাধার মান্ত্র (মুহ' is not No, he has no parents.

used now.)

Yes, he has parents (emphatic).

4.—The Dative instead of the direct construction may also be used thus:—

মন্ত্র। মন্ত্র।

I suppose your mother is aged.

Literally, To my mind your
mother seems aged.

The Honorific form of this would be:-

द्वे शेमश्यामित्यी श्वास्त्र मित्र । द्वे शेमश्यामित्र मित्र मित्र ।

ম', La, is used to express for in sentences like the following:—
5 বেই মুহ মান্দ্র মা

ABOUT, or CONCERNING, is also expressed by A LA. Thus:—

पश.वै $\mathbb{C}$ . (च) हुरे. or श्रुष्टः। जश.यो.श्र $\mathbb{C}$ . त्ये. हुरे. or

I was or have been troubled about many affairs.

### VI.—THE AGENTIVE CASE.

This case, which expresses the idea of anything being done by a person or thing, should always be used instead of the Nominative case with Transitive Verbs. The case-signs are as follow, and are annexed to the subject, that is to say, to the noun-substantive, the adjective if any, the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the phrase constituting the subject.

usable after vowels, or after a consonant sounding in inherent w.a. This w is silent, but modifies the immediately preceding vowel-sound. See § 3.

দীধা Gt, used after words ending with দা or চ'
দীধা Kyt, ... ., ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, বা, ar, ar, or মা
দীধা Gyt, ... ,, ,, ,, ,, বা, মা, মা, বা, মা, মা, বা

(N.B.— 회사, 회사, and 회사 may all be pronounced 회사 왕t.)

지자 I

UN Yi

UN Yi

UN Yi

UN Yi

used in versification after vowels.

EXAMPLES:-

ॻॖऀॱ२५ॖम। व्यः ४४ : अट ५८ : यहाँ अट : यहा

Lamas often drink tea.

ट्याष्ट्रिंद्रायाः क्रीटा है वयः व क्या व व क्या व क्य

If you had told me the truth I would have forgiven you.

ৼয়ড়ৣ৾৻৸৻৸য়৻৸৻ঽ৾৻য়ৢ৾ঽ৻য়ৢৢঀ৻ৠৢ৾৻য়৾ঽৢ। য়ৢয়৻য়ৣ৻ৼৢঢ়ৢ৻৸৻৸ঀ৻য়ঢ়ৢ৻য়৻ৼৢঽৢ।

I cannot give him the work.

She will not eat her food.

दे. ब्रेच. च्रेच. ज्या मि. ख्रेच. च्रेच्च. व्य. ब्रेच. च्रेच. ज्या प्राची. च्रेच. व्य. क्षेच. च्रेच. ज्या प्राची. च्रेच. व्य. च्रेच्च.

Then a serving layman will bring food. (Amundsen).

देश्यायटाक्षेत्रदेशायुः स्वित्। अर्थेटाकटास्त्रुवानीयपुन्ता

Then the messenger pours out the wooing-beer for both the parents of the girl.

(Amundsen).

चुरार्थाः। चुरार्थाः।

The two parents of the boy thus consulted (conversed).

(Amundsen).

বর্মী.পাদর.

Do-K'AN, The goer, He who goes.

लूट.श्राप्तथ.

Yong-K'an, The comer, He who comes.

**এট্র**.প্রা**মর**.

DI-K'AN, The writer, He who writes.

It is found thus in the Literary Tibetan into which the New Testament has been translated:—

ব্রুজার্মার্থ রাজ্য নামুদ্র বিদ্যান্ত্র বিদ্যান্ত বিদ্যান বিদ্যান বিদ্যান্ত বিদ্যান্ত বিদ্যান বিদ্যান বিদ্যান্ত বিদ্যান বি

He who built all things is God
(Heb. iii. 4).

स्याणिटः स्टायन्द्रः स्याप्त्यः मुन्त्राचाः स्याणिटः स्टायन्द्रः स्याप्त्यः मुन्त्राचाः

But he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is also used adjectively, thus:-

প্রবান্মু মাদ্র দ্রী ম ।

The man who steals sheep.

The way in which it is used with the different tenses will be found explained in the paragraphs on The Pronoun (§ 31, IX, A), and The Verb (§ 38, V., D.), and in the Appendix of Conjugations.

## VII.—THE LOCATIVE CASE.

This case expresses relations of Space, but implies also the idea of Rest.

The common case-signs are the following primitive particles:—

$$\left\{\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{A}^{\bullet} & \mathbf{L}\mathbf{A} \\ \mathbf{A}^{\bullet} & \mathbf{N}\mathbf{A} \end{array}\right\} : \ In, \ On, \ At, \ By, \ \text{etc.}$$

so ব্রন্থা Gyu'-nম : Through.

Sometimes the more Literary particles 5, Tu, 5, Ďu, 5 Ru, T., Su, are also met with.

Examples:—

मिक्स सन्दर्भ क्षेत्र कुत् नुन।

He lives in Lhassa proper.

वृट्-सेर्-ज.चाशिट-रूचाश-चार्यटा।

Please speak in Tibetan.

दशमिं वि.श्रुक्ती स्ट. (for स.र.)

I saw him sitting next his brother.

सर्हर्ने ने त्राना हिये प्विट ह्येट नी त्रम् स्था

Does the chhorten remain by the shepherd's tree?

मिर्ट्सिमिट्रराक्ष्रित्।

He will be at his own house.

दश-दे-प्रा-मुक्ष-भ-(or व) न्यूनिश-न-प्रव।

I have read it in a history-book.

His mother kissed him on the forehead.

The following Colloquial examples illustrate the use of compound postpositions as expressive of the same Locative idea:—

or सैनाजूट दश। विष्यां स्थानी जूनाश जासी मोना हो राजश.

Will the servant wait outside?

टपु.र्जूब.ज.श.च<mark>ब</mark>ीचोश.र्च्चोश.चोबट.।

Please do not stand in front of me.

वर्तम्। वर्म।

Tibet is beyond Sikhim.

म्री.घर.ज.परेचा। पर्यश.कृष्यायज्ञातीज.र्यट.पर्येचालीज्ञा Sikhim is between Nipāl and Butān.

मिट.त.कृत्.यन्त्रमायायन्त्रना।

The house is near the river.

स्राप्तः) स्राप्तः (or हेट.रे. or

It is snowing on the hill-tops.

<u>424.44.45.42.4.4241</u>

ह्य-गु.लमाप्तियः (or बट.ब.)

The money is inside the leather bag.

The wolf is in the midst of the flock of sheep.

क्वाश (or नायश्रा) तर्ना। मूँटामुँरारे नायरा है क्या मी सामा

The city stands beside a big river.

३.त्.ज.प्रेच। जिभश्याचटार्ने जैश्वर श्रेटा हु.त्. बुचा ची खचा The court of justice is near a pretty garden.

म्ब्रान् मुक्तिक्ति त्र्वा । सुन्तु ने स्वर्क्तिक्षा स्वर्क्ष The child creeps under the pony's legs.

It will be seen that the above Locative postpositions are used with the Genitive Case, that is, they are connected by means of the Genitive sign with the substantive or other part of speech to which they refer.

Notice, however, the following constructions:—

मिल्नान्त्राम्यः स्त्रीयः व्यास्त्रीयः व्यास्त्राः स्त्रीयः व्यास्त्राः स्त्रीयः व्यास्त्राः स्त्रीयः व्यास्त्र

The dog chases the hen round the house.

पक्षु ५ वस १ में ५ में स्मृत्या ( or दें से ) मान माने सामी प्राप्त ।

The load must pass through between the two posts.

ু বহুজ্যবাধু ধেনে মান্দ্রীনাধ্য ফুল। ই.জু.ধুনা মুধু ধেনে মান্দ্রীনাধ্য ফুল।

The train, passing through the midst of the rocky hill, inside the constructed path, ran = The train ran through the rock by the tunnel.

# VIII.—THE PERIODAL OR DURATIONAL CASE.

This case expresses relations of *Time*. Its common signs are the same primitive particles as those which denote the Locative Case, namely:—

 $\left. egin{array}{ccc} egin{array}{cccc} egin{array}{cccc} At, \ In, \ During, \ {
m etc.} \end{array} 
ight.$ 

There are also others, like 5' Ru, 5' Ra, 5' Du, 5N' Dü, etc.

Sometimes the sign is used alone, and sometimes it forms part of compound postpositions, or even of precedent adverbial expressions.

EXAMPLES:

मिं कु र्रें द म्ब्युयायाय में दिनें राणी रेद।

मि. प्रि. प्र. के. मैंद्र. रेश ज. मी. चीर ज.

श्रेवश.पर्नेगी

लूट्। टश.ब्रिट्र.ज.च्यच.चाश्रेश.च्री.वेट.ज.झॅट्र.

मिश्रमान्त्रीक्षायः यद्ग्यक्षः यद्ग्यक्षः मोश्रमाः व

(or signal) marker!

দ্রী-<u>দূর ।</u> রূম-দেগ্রাধ্বদেশ দ্রী-দূর্যান্তীনাধ্য-প্রথা

चर्ट्य विद्याणी स्त्री। इंद्रिय वार्ट्य विद्याणी स्त्री

र्थान्यक्षेत्रायां में हे होत्रीट रे की श्री से से स्थापन

र्यः देवे : हेश्रायः (or मिलुमायः) दशः वर्रः वर्रामा मुद्दारा (or मिलुमायः) दशः वर्रः

He must go at three o'clock.

He came to India in his twentieth year.

I shall pay you within three months.

At (or during) the first salutation Tibetans present ceremonial scarfs to each other.

The devil disappeared at dusk.

I knew the doctrine of Buddha a long time ago.

I knew the Amban named Shangtāi a short time ago.

At the same time (or At a certain time) he was Chinese Ambassador in Darjeeling.

Since that time, so I have heard, he has died.

रूपाश्चायटः। क.ष्ट्रर्जिनुःस्मितालः (or चरःरे.) शालूटः

Please do not come till five o'clock.

दे'दश'दश'मुँद'**अ'सहयाम'व**5द'मी'भैद।

Then (or At that time) I will receive you, i.e., grant admittance.

मु्ट्रिम्बिचाजःश्रेचशःसः रूर्।

At last you have arrived !

大名・まつい、 当にいうできると、 without the あっ 可にいうできると、 without the あっ 可にいうできると

On the way up to (i.e. before reaching or getting to) the hill top, you will be tired.

**ፚ**፞፞ጘ፝፞፞ኯ፟ጜ፞፞ጘ፞፞፞፞

In sentences like the following, where the durational signification is obvious, the case-sign (say 5 NA' DÜ-LA) is omitted:—

कुः वेर्न मानेश्वास्य स्याप्य स्योत्।

It has rained for (or during) two hours.

That is to say, it is unnecessary to say 5.55.43% just as in English it suffices to say It has rained two hours, instead of for two hours.

## IX.—THE MODAL CASE.

This Case is intended to include all that is connoted by the term Instrumental Case, and some other additional significations. The signs are:—

ላች: By, Through, By way of, Via.

55 DANG: With, Against.

N' SA (silent): With, Because, Since, etc. Also the Participial idea.

मुद्रामुद्धाः Kafin-gai

ਉਂਝ Ch'ir (Literary)

By, Through, On account of, By reason of, etc.

ម្និតិ Ch'ir-du(Literary)

EXAMPLES :-

[ATM. NC. 4위. 취소. 다 스트 스트 스)

र्'रे'स्य'श्रम्'क्श'५हश।

むるいなるできる。

अयबदायसम्बिष्यायबदा।

मुः अप्ते के अप्ताद्य अप्याद्य द्वारा

ट.क्रु.ज.जभ.य.ज.हच.त.रंट.ब्रेच.चैट.।

विषयायन् केंश्रामुवार्योन्दासहवायारेन्।

বন্ধবার্ত্যানে । বন্ধবার্ত্যানে বিশ্বরূপ ক্রিন ক্রম নার্ব্যান্ত্র্যা

मोड्रेर. (ज.) ह्यूपश.पर्टेट.।

कटामटामी मुन्यमीशामि सेराया सेटाया रेत्।

मेर्ट.शूट.। मेर्ट.त्रथ.हे. ह.मीट.चमीट.एकृत.मी. चेर्ट.त्रथ.हे. ह.मीट.चमीट.एकृत.मी. चर्या.पेश.सं.सर्थ.त्रथ.हेर.हर्या.कृतश. Accost (or call to) him by name.

Seize the horse by the reins.

If you catch the fowl, catch it by the legs.

If you grasp the fish, grasp it by the head.

The lamas spoke through trumpets.

We met (or fell in) with robbers on the road.

The Shyab-pā's (Źhāpés) have had an interview with the Regent.

Will the Regent agree with the opinion of the Kā-lons?

Our soldiers have fought with the enemy, or against the enemy.

Strike the nail with the hammer.

He was ruined by, through, or on account of, the beer-house.

The Päṇ-chhen-rim-po-chhe, or Tsang-päṇ-chhen, called the Ṭashi Lama, came from Ṭashi-lhümpo via Darjeeling.

The following is Literary from the New Testament:—

नि**र्जे** मार मी क्षेर अपरी निमान होते।

What question (dispute) ye with them?

Colloquially:—

यः मुचः गुः भेर्र । यः मुचः गुः भेर्र ।

Again:-

ट्राप्त्रदाशः सन्देश्वाशः भीवा।

It is I: be not afraid: Literally, It being I, etc.

Colloquially: --

८.जूर.व्ह. (कृट.) श.बुर.कृती

The following also is Literary:

रेंदे भुर मिन्द्रन सेंद or सेंद्र रासंद | Through or by what was he ruined?

### X.—THE ABLATIVE CASE.

Postpositions such as 55° DANG, 58° NX, and 28° LX, all signifying From, From amongst, From amidst, Out of, etc., are usually assigned to this case; but inasmuch as, when carrying those significations, they really express the idea of Direction from, they have been placed under the heading Terminative Case.

মহা Lä, however, possesses meanings other than Direction from.

Accordingly, 직자 LA, and 즉 NA, may be taken as the signs of the Ablative Case, as expressive of significations such as the following:—

디지: LA: Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

ላ NA (with negative): Unless, If..not.

EXAMPLES:-

र्केट्र शुक्तार । बिन्द्र स्पर्ट हे.की. चोर ज म्यान विश्व त्यश्च

The Shapé will not stay in India except for a few months, i.e. longer than a few months.

There was nobody in the fortress except one soldier.

त्रीयशम्बद्धाः

অধ্যশার্থধন্থ ক্রিন্ম ক্রিন্ম ন্থ্রিন ন্ট্রন্ম ন্থ ন্থ্য

दर्-ॐश्रन्यःचर्टः जूटः। दर्नेज्ञन्तः क्रुंहिन् क्रुंहिन् क्रुंहिन् क्रुंहिन् When the Oriental possesses nothing but one piece of cotton cloth he is often happy.

Besides this there is no other.

Unless all the work is done you will get no pay.

Unless travellers are not robbed, i.e. If travellers are robbed, you will all be punished.

नाय हे हिंदार्के श्रेस्थ शे हुर व।

Colloquially:—

विंद्र के तिवेद्र या के क्षेत्र वा

मिन्द्रिं स्तर् मुला ह्वे ता से द्वा

श्रेय.बै.म.सैप.य।

नामःम्।याद्रनाद्राः सःचल्नाः ।

Unless ye repent, or If ye repent not (Literary. I Luke xiii. 3, 5).

Unless you repent.

Unless the dog is at the entrance door.

Unless the petition is presented.

Unless the agreement (bond) has been signed.

The following are Literary expressions used in the New Testament:—

क्षेन्द्रमञ्ज्ञास्य मिर्देविश्वास्य स्ट्रान्त्रमञ्ज्ञास्य स्ट्राः etc.

Except the apostles they all, etc. (Acts viii. 1).

रे'अ' **३५'**दो र विना भेरि र गुै' य**र 'य**' माथा र श'

Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf (Luke xvi. 26).

नुस्र'यार'दे'द्रा'त्र्यक्र्य etc.

Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, i.e. fornication not having been committed. (Matt. v. 32).

These may be rendered Colloquially thus:-

भे भू के सम्मित्ना (or भेष्पा) रिकें प्रमध उर् etc.

Except the apostles they all, etc.

चेश.वंश.चि.चंत.वं। श्रेश.चेट.४८.चु.श्रु.रेशव.जूची.चोलुश.श. Whosever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication=If anybody divorces his wife, fornication not having been committed.

देश्यमिट्रम्थः (or देश्येद्रयः) टार्क्टर् मिंद्रार्के देः वरः वाम्प्यदः माञ्चरः दें केदः दें निम्पेंद्रार्दाः ।

Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf, etc.

The expressions Apart from, and Rather than, are rendered thus:—

८४१ मिंद्र १८५ मा मार्थ स्थेर मी स्थेर।

I have two rupees, but apart from that I will give you nothing.

र्वाद प्रायम् । विद्राय प्रमुद्धाः वायस्य विद्यास्य स्थितः स्था

I would rather give you food than money.

Or বন্ধুম'ম'মীর।

Would give.

# XI.-THE TERMINATIVE OR TRANSITIVE CASE.

This case denotes the relations of a noun or pronoun with reference to its Direction in Time or Space, either towards or from something mentioned in the sentence, and it may imply the idea of motion as well as that of rest. Under it come, as already stated, many expressions signifying direction from, which in other books are assigned to the Ablative Case.

The signs of the case as thus defined are:—

Dv: after final 5, 5, 4, N, N, N,

Tu: after final না, স্ব্না, ব

: after final vowels.

रु. Su : after final

commonly used in the Colloquial U. FY: after anything, and possessing

the significations of all the

above signs.

DIRECTION TOWARDS.

55' DANG DIRECTION FROM. uv. Lä

Example:--

### 1.—DIRECTION TOWARDS.

ቫጜ" BAR-DU: Up to, Until, As far as, As long as..not.

ราหุติ กรารารพาศัยมามชี้ระ Up till now, I have not seen him.

5.77.5. Hitherto.

 $\vec{\beta}$  $\vec{\beta}$ ' $\vec{\gamma}$  $\vec{\gamma}$ ' or  $\vec{\beta}$ ' $\vec{\gamma}$  $\vec{\gamma}$ ' Until then, Up to that time.

মার্থিন্মন্থিন্দের As long as it has not been obtained, i.e. Until it has been obtained.

पर्ने क्रा क्रा मारे पर प्रमा How far is Lhasa from here?

55-38-5. DANG NYAM-DU: Together with, Along with, In Company with.

मिनु प्राप्ता रे द्वारा द्वारा स्थान त्या का का dwelling with wild beasts in the desert.

รุฏิสร์ Kyi-bu: Amongst, Amidst, Into the midst of.

নিমান্তর মিন্মার দ্বীর শ্লুক বি বৃদ্যী মানু মার্ক্রমেশী বিদ্যালয় The cat springs in amongst the twittering sparrows (little gray birds.)

শৃত্য Gän-du: Towards.

श्रें केंग्रा देश व्याप्त केंग्रा कि crowd is going towards the palace.

55. Nang-du: Into.

ট্রিন্ট্রেন্ড্রেন্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড

র্মানু T'od-Tu: In the direction of; Towards.
নি ম ক ক মন মূল্য কৈ কিন্দু কিন্দু কিন্দু The eagle soars towards the sun.

 $\left\{\begin{array}{l} \mathbf{x}^* & \mathbf{R}\mathbf{A} \\ \mathbf{z}^* & \mathbf{R}\mathbf{v} \end{array}\right\} To.$ 

মুশুলুসর্কার (or মা, or মর্কির) সন্দানের The boy has been sent to sea.

মিত্র প্রত্যান্তর দি has come from up there hitherward.
মিত্র প্রত্যান্তর দি has come from down there hitherward.
মিত্র প্রত্যান্তর দি has come from over there, or yonder, hitherward.

म्निम् कार् के दिने मिद्र पि क्षेत्र (or more Colloquially हु) हुद्देश मिद्रमा The ants are swarming near my feet.

እንኝ MA-RU: Down to.

प्रमिन्न अन्तर्भे भेर I am going down to the bazaar.

저지: MAR: Downwards, Down; 여자 YAR, Upwards, Up.
다면지면 저지면 되었다면 I shall travel up and down.

Su: To, Towards.

নুমান্ত্র (or মা) ব্রহাণ্ট্রা It is getting towards the time.
নিম্মান্ত্র মান্ত্র মান্ত্র দি has gone to his own abode.

মুদারাম Ch'ō-la, or মেম Ngō-la: Towards, On, etc.

अञ्चल of the road there are houses, on that side meadows.

र्मन्द्र्राद्रेन्य्राद्धाः (or द्विन्धाः ) श्रेवसः वुदः The army marched towards Tibet.

5 N'A' ĎÜ-LA: To the time; at the time of.

5ุมามาธรามีนั้ว It came down to the time, i.e. The time arrived รุมามาธรามัน The time will come.

קל־אָב" BAR-NANG-DU ? or קאָרוֹם BAR-LA: Over, above.

युः अत्येय दे प्रमें दे प्रमें दे प्रमादिष्ट पी द्वा The butterfly flits over my head.

মূর্ম Ngön-la: Ahead, In front.

্রে ফুর্মানুশ Go on ahead (or in front) of me.

# 2.—DIRECTION FROM.

55° ĎANG: From. This is Literary.

মর্ক্র'র'মামর্ক্রমমান্র'ব্দেশ্রদান্দি The lake is far from the frontier.

মন্মান্ত্রি বৃদ্ধির বিশ্ব কিন্তু The husk was separated from the grain.

ላኝ Nä: From.

भूभः देः भूषः रूटः द्वष्टः वीः यरः व्रश्नायः युवः वीनाः धः रेदः The snake has crawled from between the bushes.

वि भे ने कुन में देना दशमा नुय ने नि नि त्रुमा The cat creeps from under the table.

निस्रानित्ति मुस्रान् के ति विनाद्या व

મિં.ભ.વેશ.ત્ર. દ્વેવ.ત. દુર્વે. He has gone from up there thitherward.

মি'হা'ব্য'থ্য'থ্য'হি' He has gone from down there thitherward.

5'ব্যাস্থ্রীর'ক্র5'ন্যাম্রির'মান্রবাণ্ট্রীর Henceforth I shall not speak to you.

ই'ব্যাহ্যান্ত্র'মান্ত্র' After that, or thenceforth, I did not speak to him.

मिंद्र त्र देश देश देश किया में किया में त्रुपा You may walk from here to there, or to that.

র্দামান্মান্মান্মান্মান্মান্মান্দ্র From the beginning it was not so.
—(New Testament).

# Colloquially :-

র্থ্য-১৯ বিশ্বর্থ (or বিশার), or বিশারতে প্রামানিক From the beginning it was not so.

মিত্রত্বিষ্ট্রত He originated from the Lotus.—(S. C. Das.)

지지 LA: Out of.

भे निक्ष मि ते ले में के त्या के विकास के त्या के त्य

§ 26.—Numerals.

I.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to 可以可以 (or 表知可) (or 表知可) 如 可以 DANG-KYI (or TSI-KYI) NAM-DANG, Arithmetical Enumeration.

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	Romanized Equivalent.
1	2	ন্তন্'	Chi'.
2	3	मार्केश.	Ňyī.
3	3	শ্রম্	Sum.
4	<b>U</b>	ସ୍ୱି.	Žhyi.
5	r	<b>ਲੋ.</b>	Ňga.
6 5		<b>5</b> ुन	Ďu'.
7	υ	<sup>5</sup> 54.	Ďün.
8	٨	ন্ <u>ন</u> ্	Ğyä'.
9	e	55.	Ğu.
10	20	নম্ভ', or নম্ভ'ন্থম'শ'	Chu, or Chu t'an pa.
11	22	यश्च मिठमा	Chug-chi'.
12	23	च दु:मार्कुशः	chu <b>ģ-ňyī</b> .
13	23	ন <b>ু</b> .নাশুম	Chuģ-sum.
14	20	ସକ୍ତ:ସବ୍ଧି:	Chub-žhyi.
15 2 <b>x</b> 16 2 <b>s</b>		নউন্থ	Chö-nga.
		<i>ਬ</i> ਕੈ. <b>2</b> ੰਜ.	Chu-ḍu'.
17	7	বঞ্ <i>ন</i> ুধ্	Chub-dün.

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	Romanized Equivalent.				
18	2L	च हु.चम्रीट.	Chob-gyä'.				
19	<b>76</b>		Chu-ğu.				
20	20		Nyi-shu, or Nyi- shu t'am-pa.				
21	<b>3</b> 7	्रि:मु:डामाठेमा, or रुर:माठेमा, or डामाठेमा	Nyi-shu tsag-chi'. Nyer-chi'.				
22	22	्र महिमा (१९ मु सम्महिस, or (४ महिस	CTsag-chi'.  Nyi-shu tsag-nyī.  Tsag-nyī.				
30	30		Sum-chu, or Sum- chu t'am-pa.				
31	32	( শুমান্ত মাঁ দাউদা', or	Sum-chu sog-chi'.				
40	<b>~</b>		Žhyib-chu, or Žhib-chu t'am- pa.				
4]	27	(यही:यहु:ह्वे:म्विस्मः, or	Žhib-chu žhye-chi Žhye-chi'.				
5(	<b>6.4</b>	ਨਿ. <b>ਹ</b> ੰ. or ਨਿ.ਹ <b>ੰ.ਖ਼ਖ਼</b> .ਹ.	Ngab-chu t'am pa.				
5	<b>Y</b> 2	ट्रैमाखः, or ट्रैमाखःशस्यः ∫ट्रम्बद्धःरम्बद्धमाः ∫ट्रम्बद्धःरम्बद्धमाः	Ngab-chu nga-chi' Nga-chi'.				
60	o so	र्वुमार्डः, or र्वुमार्डः श्रमःयः	Dug-chu, or Dug chu t'am-pa.				
6		(বুনাস্ত:ই'নাউদা', or	Dug-chu re-chi'.				

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	Romanized Equivalent.				
70	Vo	ন বুৰ ক্ত', ০ ন ব <b>ুৰ</b> ক্ত'প্ৰসাধা	Dün-chu, or Dün- chu t'am-pa.				
71	ינט	∫वर्त्रःखःर्देन्यार्रमाः, or दिन्यार्थमाः	Ďön-chu dön-chi'.				
80	<b>ده</b>	বর্নু <b>র্ড</b> , or বর্নু <b>র্ড</b> য়য়'য়'	(Dön-chi'. Ğyä'-chu, or Ğyä'. chu t'am-pa.				
81	19	्री मुंज् पुरम्या त्रिमा , or विक्रा मुंजी प्रमा , or	Ğya'-chu gya-chi'.				
90	ලං	र्गु'नहु', or र्गु'नहु'र्यस्यः	Ğub-chu, or Ğub- chu t'am-pa.				
91	<b>@</b> 2	(रम्]'म् दुःम्]'म् दिम्।', or	Ğub-chu go-chi'.				
100	200	্বর্নু, or বর্নু, ধম.ব.	Ğya, or Ğya-t'am- pa.				
101	202	ন্র্নু'ব্দ'ন্টিন্	Ğya Ğdang chi'.				
. 200	200	శ్రీ'ন্যকু', or శ్రీశు'নকু'	Nyib-ğya, or Nyib- ğya.				
<b>3</b> 00	300	શ্বম'নক্র'	Sum-gya.				
400	<b>U</b> C0	বৰ্ণ বৰ্ষ্য	Zhyib-gya				
500	<b>V</b> -00	원· <sup>고</sup> 화·	Ňgab-ğya.				
1000	2000	ह्रेंट', or <b>हें</b> ट'स्न	Tong, or Tong-t'a'				
<b>550</b> 0	v, <b>y</b> 00	ह्रेट.संचाजि.रट.जि.चचे.	Tong-t'a' nga dan ngab-gya.				
10,000	20,000	মূ', or মূ'্রশ	Ţ'i, or Ţ'i-ţ'a'.				
100,000	200,000	বরুষ:, or বরুষ:ধ্রা:	Bum, or Bum-ț'a				
1,000,000	2,000,000	¥1.cd.	Sa-ya.				
10,000,000	20,000,000	ਸ਼੍ਰੇ:ਧ:	J'e-wa.				

English.	Tibetan.	Romanized equivalent.
100 millions	2ेट.स <u>्</u> रेट.	Dung-ch'ur.
1000 millions	वेर- <b>द</b> ीका.	T'er-bum.
10,000 millions	<b>র্ব-</b> দেবুম-ঐ <b>র</b> -মূ	T'er-bum oh'em-po.
100,000 millions.	सिमासिमा.	T'ag-t'i'.
A billion	सिना सिना क्रुब स्त्र	Tʻagʻtʻi' chʻem-po.
10 billions	<b>≺</b> ব.ঘশুষ.	Rah-ṭam.
100 billions	<b>শ্ব-ঘ</b> শুষ-ক্টৰ্ণ্ট্ৰ-	Rab-tam ch'em-po.
1000 billions	चारसंस.	Ťam.
10,000 billions	मानुस्रक्षः केवः द्य	Tam-ch'em-po.
100,000 billions	<b>ব্</b> শুলাহা	Tī'.
1,000,000 billions	<b>न्त्रीनाश</b> केंब ये	Tī ch'em-po.

N.B.—To the above succeed progressive numbers increasing by multiples of ten up to sixty enumerations, counting 100 millions as the ninth. These sixty enumerations are used for astronomical and astrological purposes. Sanskrit equivalents exist only up to the fifty-first enumeration. See Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's Dictionary, article TEN GRANGS (Dang).

II.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to 可用文表可以 KA-K'AI NAM-DANG, Alphabetical Enumeration.

The following system of Numerical Notation is employed by Tibetans in their Registers, Indices, and the like. It only goes up to 300, and consists of an adaptation of the Tar. It may be regarded as the equivalent of our own method of Notation by means of the Roman letters.

1	to	30	η,	P,	শ',	and	80	on	to	M.
31	,,	60	में,	Ä,	मीं,	,,	>>	,,	"	જી.
61	,,	90	Ŋ,	Ħ.,	Ħ,	,,	••	,,	>>	<b>À</b> .
91	,,	.120			मों,		,,	,,	,,	છો.
121	,,	150	Ψ̈̄,	P.,	मां,	39	"	"	,,	র্ট্য
151	, ,,	180	η,	TI,	না,	,,,	,,	,,	,,	ও থে.
181			G 4 E C	म् त	में तिं के	"	,,	"	59	G 9.32 G
211	,,	240	т•	177	ETT:	,,	,,	"	39	<b>12</b> (1)
241	,,	270	) <del>[</del> [	भूमं त	त्तिंशं में ते में त	,,	,,	<b>59</b>		ક્ષે
271	,,	<b>30</b> 0	(d) = (d	Ä,	मां,	"	"	"	"	র্জু

#### NOTES.

#### 1.—Pronunciation.

#### 2.—AFFIXES.

Used with the full tens, up to and inclusive of a hundred; meaning thereby a collective body, or whole lot, of any of those numbers. It is, however, similarly, but much less frequently, applied to numbers below ten.

After a hundred and with thousands 적기 T'A' is used. Also after expressions denoting periods of time, such as 지것하다. Ďtn-ṭ'A', a week; 공격기 DA-Ṭ'A', a month.

With numbers above thousands & Ts'o; is used.

As regards all these affixes, however, their use or non-use is quite optional.

#### 3.—Conjunctions.

Note that where units are connected with some multiple of ten, the conjunction used is different for each series. In the 20 series it is \$\mathbb{E}^\* \text{TsA}; in the 30 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{So}; in the 40 series, \$\mathbb{Q}^\* \text{ZhyE}; in the 50 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{NgA}; in the 60 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{RE}; in the 70 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{Don}; in the 80 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{GyA}; in the 90 series, \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{Go}. With the hundreds it is \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{Dang}. It would not, however, be wrong to use \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{Dang} in all cases. In Literary Tibetan both \$\mathbb{N}^\* \text{Dang}, and one of the other conjunctions (usually) \$\mathbb{E}^\* \text{TsA}, are used together. Thus \$\mathbb{N}^\* \mathbb{N}^\* \text{Tong Dang TsA sum, 1003}. This is not done in the Colloquial.

In the Colloquial the short forms সুনাইনা Tsad-chi', 21; সুনাইনা Tsad-chi', 21; সুনাইনা Sod-chi', 31; ইনিইনা Sob-zhyi, 34; and the like, are very often heard instead of the longer forms, গুলুইনাইনা Nyi-shu-tsad-chi', 21, etc.

When dates are being stated or enumerated, the \$\mathbb{T}\$ TsA, or \$\mathscr{T}\$.

DANG in the 20 series is dropped, and the form with \$\mathscr{T}\$ NYER is used, e.g. \$\mathscr{T}\$ T\$\mathscr{T}\$ NYER-GYË'-PA, the 28th.

4.—The Indefinite Article, see § 28.

# 5. APPROXIMATE NUMBERS.

Expressions like two or three, nine or ten, are rendered by putting the numbers in immediate juxtaposition. Ex. निर्माणका NYI-SUM two-three; ५५७.५५ Gub-chu, nine-ten. If the speaker likes, he may

add উদা Chi', a or an, to any of these expressions. Thus, দায়ার উদা Nyi sum chi', Two or three.

Another method is to employ the adverb 5% TSAM, About, Just about, As many as. Ex. 5% 5% Sod CHI' TSAM, About 31, or As many as 31; or the adverbs 5% HA-LAM, 5% GA-CH'EN, 5% TSAR, or 5% DAM-LA, signifying nearly, almost. In these cases the adverb follows the numeral it qualifies.

### 6.—ORDINAL NUMBERS.

The first is rendered  $5 \mathbb{C} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Dang-po, and The very first  $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{C} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Je-dang-po. With these exceptions the ordinals are merely the cardinals plus the particle  $\mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  PA. Ex.  $\mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Nyi-pa, The second;  $\mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Chö-nga-pa, The fifteenth;  $\mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Nyer-sum-pa, or  $\mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ} \mathbb{Z}^{\circ}$  Nye-shu sum-pa, The twenty-third.

### 7.—DISTRIBUTIVE NUMBERS.

When simple numerals are repeated in juxtaposition, e.g. The simple numerals are repeated in juxtaposition, e.g. The simple sum, Three-three, the meaning may be either three each, or three at once, or three at a time, or in threes, according to the way the sentence is framed. For instance, phrases like Three at a time, or In threes, or One at a time, are rendered by help of the expression 5% 5% J'Ä-NÄ, or CHÄ NÄ, literally Having done or Having made. Thus:—

मि.ष्ट्र्-इंन्ड्र-विश्व-वेश-वेश-वेटः । मि.ष्ट्र-श्रेश-श्रेश-वेश-वेश-वेश-वेटः ।

They set out in threes, or three at a time.

They arrived one by one, or one at a time.

Expressions like Three each, Two each, One each, are rendered by RE-RE and a repeated numeral, but without the JNJN J'X-NX.

Thus :-

भिन्देन्द्र भारत्में स्थान श्रुक्ष हिंदा | Give each coolie one rupee.

In the case of composite numerals like 55 निजा Don-chi', Seventy-one, only the last number of the compound is repeated. Ex.:— 55 निजा निजा Don-chid-chi', Seventy-one each, seventy-one at a time, or In seventy-ones.

8.—AGGREGATES.

Expressions like The two together, or Both, or All three, or The whole ten, may be rendered with the aid of the particles \(mathbb{T}\) KA, or \(\frac{\mathbb{Z}}{\text{C}}\) Po, affixed to the cardinal. Ex.:—\(\mathbb{T}\) NYI-KA, Both, or The two together; \(\mathbb{T}\) SUM-PO, All three, or The three together; \(\frac{\mathbb{T}}{\text{C}}\) GU-CHA, The whole nine.

Fi Po, thus affixed, may also signify the aforesaid, if the context so requires.

9.—Fractions.

These are usually expressed by adding the word & Ch'A, Part, to the cardinal, which is sometimes put in the Genitive Case. Thus:—

is rendered by नाह्यहा के Sum-ch'a.

łth ", ", ", Де́ъ́ъ́ Żнүі-сн'а.

রর nd ,, ,, র শাস্ত্র সাত্ত Sod-মধা ch'a, or ইশ্মিন্ট সাত্ত Sod-মধা kyi ch'a.

180th ,, ,, ,, ,, ឡីតែង Gya-ch'a or ជាភ្នំនិះ Gyäi-ch'a.

1000th ,, ,, ,, ឡីតែង Tong-ch'a, or ឡីតែម៉ាង Tong-

Ġi-ch'a.

ਫ਼ੈrd ,, ,, ,, ਸ੍ਬ੍ਰਿਸ਼ ਨ'ਸ੍ਰੇਸ਼ Sum-ch'a nyt.

ậth ,, ,, ,, ,, 지ବୃଂಹଂମାধ୍ୱୟ Źнүі-сн'л sum.

As regards ½, there is a special expression, namely, ૩૬૦ ch'E'-KA.

1½. may be rendered two ways: either न्हेन्द्र

CHI' DANG CH'È'-KA, OR JJ55557381 CH'È' DANG MYI, With a half, two. The latter is the commoner usage in the Colloquial.

31 is rendered নামুম'ন্দ'নিল'ক Sum dang źhyi-oh'a, or নাল্ডিক'ন্মান্দ'নিল' Żhyi-ch'a sum dang źhyi, With https://diam.

अम् प्रशास्त्रामुन्त्राम् प्रति पद्धः के विष्ण प्रशास leader received one-tenth of the booty.

### 10.—ADVERBIAL CARDINAL NUMBERS.

Expressions like Once, Twice, Thrice, Four times, etc., are rendered by the word 충자 Ts'ar, or 회도자 T'eng, Time, followed by the desired cardinal number. Ex.:— 충자미국과 Ts'ar-chi', or 회도자미국과 T'eng-chi', Once; 충자미국과 Ts'ar-nyt, or 회도자미국과 T'eng-nyt Twice; 충자미국과 Ts'ar-sum or 회도자미국과 T'eng-sum, Thrice; 충자 지역 Ts'ar-zhyi or 회도자기국과 T'eng-sum, Thrice; 충자 지역 Ts'ar-zhyi or 회도자기역 T'eng-zhyi, Four times.

Another word with the same signification, as 5 T's AR and T'ENG is 25 Län, but it is not so much used in the Colloquial.

Other expressions that may here be mentioned are:—

PANSING: At once. Forthwith, Straightway, Immediately.

5'র্ম'র্রম'প্রিম' Ďa Rung Ts'ar-chi': Once more..

「ত্তিম্পান্তিমা Ďa-rung ts'ar-nyt } Twice more.

১ ত্তিম্পান্তিমা Ďa-rung n'eng-nyt } Twice more.

TS'ER, A separate time or occasion, or instance.

ਲੱਝ ਲੱਝ Ts'er ts'er, Many times, On separate occasions, Repeatedly.

প্রমান্তর Shug-Ts'er, A separate time or occasion.

表であて立 Ts'ar mang-po: Many times.

表で記じている Ts'AR MANG-PO RANG (with negative): Not many times.

Once upon a time, or Once, or One day, referring either to the past or the future, may be rendered 5 र रूप (or व्यक्, or चेद्रस्) महिमा (लिमा or जीमा) Du Tetar (or Län, or T'eng) Chi' (zhyi', or shi'); or 5 र जिमा Du-Be-zhyi', or 5 र जिमा मिंडिंग Du-Be-zhyid-di Teta.

# 11.—Adverbial Ordinal Numbers.

These are formed by adding  $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$  RA, to the  $\overset{\sim}{\succsim}$  Po, or  $\overset{\sim}{\hookleftarrow}$  PA, of the ordinals. Ex.:—

**5**ር'ቯ፝፞፝፝፞፟፝ጚ' Ďang-por : Firstly.

মৃষ্ট্রাম্ম Ňyt-par: Secondly.

স্থান Tsag-chig-par: Twenty-one'thly (= Twenty-firstly.)

### 12.—DEFINITE AND INDEFINITE NUMERALS.

Among these may be classed the following:-

मार्डेकामा Nyt-KA, Both, e.g., वर्रेमार्डेकामारेमार्डकामा Both this and that.

ਹੁੰਦੇ ਸੰਦੇਸ਼ ਹੈ ਸਾਡੇਸ਼ ਸਾਡੇਸ਼ ਸਾਡੇਸ਼ ਹੈ। Both the pretty girls have arrived. ਨੁੱਘ Su-yang, Anybody; (with a negative) = None, Nobody. ਸਾਸਕੇ ' Ga-Gai, Anything; (with a negative) = None, Nothing.

The Literary forms of TITA: GA-GAI, are TICUE GANG-YANG, and SUE CHI-YANG.

Another expression is निर्माधार Chid-Yang, Even one; (with a negative)—None, Nobody, Nothing.

#### EXAMPLES.

रायना ने स्वीति विद्यासाय मार्थ हैं। None of these things will suit me.

तर्ने मार्नेश गादे न्दरन्त्र मार्नेम मिश्राधर None, or neither of these two will do.

Expressions like A whole (something), An entire (something), A complete (something), A full (something), are rendered by  $\P \sqsubseteq \P$  Gang-ga,  $\P \sqsubseteq \P$  Gang-k'a, or simply  $\P \sqsubseteq G$  Gang, or  $\P \sqsubseteq G$  Gang; and the word  $\P \trianglerighteq \P$  Chi', one, or  $\trianglerighteq \P$  Chi', A, An, is not made use of at all in such cases. Ex.:—

रुमन् श्रे र्रेश न्यू ८ मिन् (or न्यू ८) The soldiers are roasting a whole ox.

٩٩٠٩٢:\A. \

This is not a complete story.

दायम्ब्रियः वियान्त्रान्त्रान्त्रान्त्रान्त्राः Please give me a full cup of tea.

Entirely is rendered by 55.5. Ba'-be, used only with a negative.

Thus:—

表 ਨੇ ਜਿਸ ਸਿੰਘ ਰਿਹਾ ਹੈ ਤੋਂ ਜਿਸ ਸਿੰਘ ਹੈ ਤੋਂ ਜਿਸ ਸਿੰਘ ਹੈ।

Those accounts are not altogether (or entirely) accurate.

All, whole, entire, may also be rendered by 되자 उ५ Т'ам-сна, был Тs'ang-ма, and ५५ Т Ğang-к'а, от नाइना Gang-ga. Ех.:—

মমামারের মার্মমারের Wমার্মির | Suddenly the whole crowd disappeared.

খ্রীমান্মরান্ত্রিমামান্তর বিশ্বনীয়া All the women were frightened.

रे प्रमास उर्' De t'am-chà', not रे के प्रमास उर्' Den-tso t'am-chà':
They all.

সাঁত Gang, or সাঁত Gang, is also used in connection with weights and measures instead of সাঁতী, or ত্রী Chi', One, A, An.

So also, in connection with weights and measures and the Tibetan monetary system,  $\tilde{5}$  Do, is used instead of  $\tilde{7}$  Nyt, Two, and signifies A couple. Otherwise the word for a couple is  $\tilde{5}$  Ch'A.

But a phrase like Two-legged, or Three-legged, is rendered with the particle  $\zeta$ , thus:— $\pi \zeta \eta \zeta \zeta \zeta$  or  $\pi \zeta \zeta \zeta \zeta \zeta$  Here  $\zeta \zeta \zeta$  means possessed of.

Other expressions are: স্ট্রাইন Double, or Two-fold; স্ট্রাইন Twice-born; স্ট্রাইন স্ট্রাইন Every second day.

#### 13.—Noun Substantives.

Ts'o, the Plural-sign used in the Colloquial, is never expressed, either in speech or in writing, after a numeral adjective, or numeral adjectives, the noun-substantive thereby qualified always remaining in the singular. Ex.:—

মি'নাধ্যুম' (not মি'র্ক্ক'নাধ্যুম') ব্রি'্রি'রে' Three men will go with you. মঙ্গুম'র্'ট্রান্সিম'।

## 14.—NOTATION BY LETTERS.

The use of the TRANSON KA-K'AI NAM DANG, or Alphabetical Enumeration, has already been explained (See § 26 II). In this connection, when references in Indices, or Registers, or to quotations from learned works are being cited, it is customary to qualify the numeral letter by affixes such as U PA, UN PAR, and UN PA-LA, of which the first denotes the Book, Register, Index, or the like, to which reference is being made, and the last two denote that the particular quotation or citation is to be found in some particular Book, etc.

Ex.:--

মূড়ামা T'o A-PA: Register No. 30.

ਨੌਂ ਨੌਂ ਸਿੱਧੜ' Po-ti k'a-par: In Volume No. 2.

র্নাম্মামা T'o GA-PA-LA: In Index No. 3.

#### CHAPTER II.

#### ETYMOLOGY.

## § 27.—THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The Definite Article THE (which is really only an abbreviation of THAT) is represented in Tibetan in various ways, the principal being the words  $\Im \hat{\Sigma}$  DI, and  $\hat{\Sigma}$  DE, of which the former is usually said to mean This, and the latter That.

Properly, 3, or 3 when used at all, should always follow the noun or adjective which it distinguishes.

As a rule it is only used when the distinguishing or demonstrative idea is intended to be conveyed.

EXAMPLES: -

श्रेष्ट्रित्र्यं श्रेवशःवृदः।

This man arrived first.

युक्तिं सहस्याक्ति है।

That pretty girl.

As a matter of fact Tibetans altogether discard the article in conversation, unless they really desire to express the demonstrative or distinguishing idea.

EXAMPLES:--

মিন্দ্রিন্দ্র The man is co মিন্দ্র

The man is coming.

झ.पट.सुश।

Open the window.

A distinction, however, in the use of and ? is made between the nearer and the remoter relation, in regard both to time and space. For instance, when the article is intended to distinguish some person or thing already referred to, but to whom or to which reference is again being made, then, on the occasion of the second or any subsequent reference, Tibetans use  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}^{\bullet}$  DE;  $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$  DE having been used on the occasion of the first reference.

EXAMPLE:-

भ्र.रे.श्रेवश.वैट.।

The man has arrived (referring to somebody already mentioned).

Notice also how 95 and 5 are used in a phrase like this:—

এই বিষ্ণান্ত (or বিষ্ণান্ত ) আহেম সামান্ত This is the messenger who came yesterday.

(N.B.—주시시 yesterday, is Colloquial, 주시시 is Literary).

So, if on the occasion of the first reference, the object distinguished was a distant object, then  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$  would be used;  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$  being employed to distinguish a near or present object. Ex.:—

মি-বি-মিন্তা (or মি-মান্তা) আমে-মান্ত্ৰ That man (referring to somebody at a distance) is the messenger who came yesterday.

When, moreover the article distinguishes first one and then another of two objects, both of which are present, and which are being contrasted, or to which an alternative reference is being made, then, in the case of the one, 35 would be used, and, in the case of the other, 5 Ex.:—

र्भात् दे त्र्रों भ्राप्त्राधाद्वा दिन्द्रों नी This man cannot go, but that man can go (will go).

Practically, therefore, in addition to representing the article The,  $35^{\circ}$  and  $5^{\circ}$  respectively also represent the distinguishing adjectives This and That. They also respectively represent This one and That one; he, she, it.

#### PLUBAL.

The Colloquial plural of  $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\mathcal{C}}$  is  $\mathcal{A}_{1}^{\mathcal{C}}$  (pronounced DIN-TS'O), The, These, They: and that of  $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$  is  $\tilde{\mathcal{A}}$  (pronounced DEN-TS'O) The, Those, They.

Both articles, however, are often used in the singular to distinguish collective nouns. In such cases they precede the word they distinguish. Ex.:—

The following is Literary:—
নাধুদেই শাহ্ব মান্দেই বিশ্ব বিশ্র বিশ্ব বিশ্র বিশ্ব বিশ

Where a plural noun is qualified by an adjective, and the whole is distinguished by the article, it is the article which takes the plural sign Ts'o, and it is the  $\Xi$  which takes whatever case-sign there may be.

2. Another method by which the Definite Article is represented is by using the particle  $\hat{\beta}$ . NI; but this is rather Literary than Colloquial. In a long and involved sentence it may be placed after the principal noun, or noun-phrase, so as to distinguish it prominently. It may also be used to emphasize a particular word or expression, and may even be employed in addition to  $\hat{\beta}$  or  $\hat{\beta}$ .

Ex.:—

र अमें नदुः मार्रेश दे।

The twelve ra-gos (or ra-heads).

भु.धृ.श्रथम् स्व.पीयः तथाविदः दे. तत्त्रचाश

Mankind are the noblest of all animals.

नगद दे वे द्रोव सकें न दि सक्षा द

And the word was with God (John i. 1.)

चिवित्रासन्दरः।

- 3. The functions of the Definite Article are sometimes performed by the particles  $\Sigma$  PA and  $\Sigma$  PO, when affixed to numerals. (See § 26, Notes 6, 8, 14.)

₹.٩٤.١

Great and small.

भ्री माना पकी

Birth, Old age, Sickness, Death.

The conjunction  $55^{\circ}$  Dang, And, is also discarded in such expressions.

The particles under notice and conjunctions are also discarded in enumerations of nouns that are in apposition or contrast. Ex.:—

रेर्न्स् । Hope and Fear.

र्मोर्भम्। Virtue and Vice

শ্বর্থার। Heaven and Earth.

In a sentence like  $\hat{\mathcal{R}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$  (otherwise  $\hat{\mathcal{R}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$  ) The pillar of hope, the particle is omitted from the first noun,  $\hat{\mathcal{R}}$   $\hat{\mathcal{A}}$  Re-wa, and annexed only to the second.

Sometimes however a phrase is contracted and the particle omitted in both its members. Ex.:  $\mathbf{\hat{x}}^{\bullet}\mathbf{T}^{\bullet}$  The pillar of hope.

5. The student may also be reminded of the various affixes set out at the end of  $\S$  24, since they too occasionally perform the functions of the Definite Article.

# § 28.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. উলা A, An, Some, is a modification of লাউলা One, and is seen in the following forms, which may be used even in the Colloquial, if it is desired to be very correct, though as a matter of fact the form উলা Chi' is the one most favoured:—

ইনা after final না', 5', or না ন্না after all vowels, or after final দ', ব', ম', ম', or মা ন্না after final মা

2. Being an adjective when it qualifies a noun, and an adverb when it qualifies an adjective, its place in the sentence is immediately after the noun, or noun and adjective, that it qualifies. Ex.:—

इंबिम् (or रेम्)। A horse.

भ्रे'नबद'र्रे' हेम्। A virtuous man.

इंडेम्'द्रः देदंद्रंद्रांद्रेस्'रेम्। A horse and a carriage.

- 3. 37 and not the noun or adjective to which it is annnexed, takes the case-sign, but only in what we would call the Nominative. In the other cases 37 is usually dropped. Ex.:—
- ५ निर्माहर में देन महिन्द किना किना किना किना A strange horse has eaten our hay.

८ मार्डट में दे दम्झ या नश्र मुंगे भेर्। I live near a large river.

4. Annexed to approximate numerals, it signifies collectiveness.

Thus:—

भ्राम्यसुम्राम्बन्धम्।

A group of three or four men.

**५मम् स्र-र्भेट** स्ना न्य हेना मार्भेश कीना।

A force of one or two thousand soldiers.

5. Used with the adverb 중지 TSAM, About, it signifies Some. Thus:— 임미'고등작장'등피'고장'중지'이다 Some seventy or ninety sheep.

Another expression for Some is বিংপ্রা K'A-sha, and another is বিনার Tod-tse.

The Literary form of नि.नश is दन्दिलेग Ğa-źнүі'.

A few, Solely, Only, Alone, may be rendered in Colloquial by দিন্তি
Тоб-тве, পৃশ্বন Sha-та', and স্ট্নার্থ Сніб-го; and in
Literature by ব্যাহ্বি Bā-źнүі'.

6. Affixed to Interrogative Pronouns, the Article signifies (in Literary Tibetan) Whoever, Whatever, Whichever, Anyone, Anything. Thus:—

য়ৣ৻ঀৢয়৻ঀৢয়৻ঀ৻ৢয়৸৻৸ৢয়৻য়৻য়৻য়৻য়৻ঢ়৻৽tc.

Whoever with loving eyes should even regard, etc. (S.C.D.), i.e. anyone who, etc.

देवे दःसम्प्रम् (or हे बेमा) शे

There is nothing (anything, with negative) in it.

The Article is also used thus in Literature :-

नाट. हुनाम अरु. मुद्रनीश।

On account of some law-suit.

र दिमान् निहा

What (is it) wanted for?

ই নিশ্ব।

Once, on some occasion, some time.

इ.७चा.४४।

After a little, some time afterwards.

7. Affixed in any of its appropriate forms to a verbal root, it imports in Literature the Imperative Mood as addressed to servants and inferiors, and also the Hortative and Optative Moods. Thus:—

In the Colloquial also it is frequently used to express an emphatic order, and commonly takes the form  $\sqrt{2}$  Shi', though it would be more correct to say  $\sqrt{2}$  Shi',  $\sqrt{2}$  Zhyi', or  $\sqrt{3}$  Chi', according to rule. Ex.:—

8. Here may also be mentioned স্থেত Any. Ex.:—

ইংইডেম্ব্ডেস্ম্ন্ত স্থেত আছিল আছিল Any fresh news to-day?

 $\S 29.$ —The Noun.

#### A.—Structure.

- 1. The Tibetan Noun ends in either a consonant or a vowel, and is either:—
  - (a) A Monosyllable without any affixed particle, and either without or with any vowel-sign, head-letter, subjunct or prefix. Ex.:—
    - 3. Fish; 知 End; M Mountain-pass: 中 Flesh; N Earth, soil, ground, place; 知 Man; 知 Fire; 委 Water; 引 Bird, fowl; 刊刊 Head; 新 Door 中 Deer; 和 Wound;

平 Year; 等 Food, provisions; 55 Head (Honorific); 料 Hair (Human, on head).

Sometimes, however, the particle does not indicate gender. Ex.:— [Note: A mountain-shrub; Note: Day, sun; Note: Evening; Monk, priest; Note: Music; Note: A kind of tree; Note: Ba-wa, Goitre; Note: Pledge; Note: Envelope, wrapper.

Sometimes the particle serves merely to differentiate the meanings of roots otherwise similarly or somewhat similarly spelt. Ex.:—

মূর্ম To show, to teach; but মূর্ম Autumn; দান Marrow, pith, descent, origin; but দান্য Foot; সাইন Confidence; but সাইন্যাম The expanded hood of a snake.

If the particle is either  $\nabla$ ,  $\nabla$ ,  $\nabla$ , or  $\widetilde{\nabla}$ , it may be and often is dropped (especially when followed by an adjective), without affecting the meaning of the word. Ex.:—

मुद्रा केन स्ति। मुद्र केन स्ति। मुद्र केन स्ति। मुद्र केन सि four great kings.

Some of such particles perform the functions of DIMINUTIVES
Thus, in the case of 3, the inherent 5, or 5, of the final or the

only consonant of the noun, is turned into  $\mathfrak{R}$ , and is followed by the particle. Ex.:—

3. Fish; 33. Little fish; I Cow; IJ. Calf.

In other cases the final consonant, if a  $\P$ , is cut off the noun, and turned into a second syllable, to which Zhyab-kyu is added. Ex.:—

युना Hand; युना Little hand; युना Child; युना Little child; युना Sheep; युना Lamb.

In other cases the Diminutive particle is simply added to the primitive noun as it stands. Ex.:— N. Man; Ng. Mannikin; 45. Sack: 45.3. Sacklet.

Another way of expressing the Diminutive is to qualify the noun by the adjective  $\mathcal{E}^{\mathsf{L}}$  Small. Ex.:—

되면된 A little inn. 된 경투 A little mind, narrow mind.

Or lastly-

(c) A DISSYLLABLE, OR EVEN A POLYSYLLABLE, either without or with a particle. Those nouns, and especially the polysyllabic nouns, which are mostly proper names, and sometimes even amount to phrases, are often comparatively modern words which have either gradually developed or been deliberately compounded out of originally simple elements. Ex.:—

নুবাদা Chair; ব্রিম Cat; মান্ধ Layman; কর্মাদা Contract; মান্ধ্র মৃদ্ধাদ্ধ Diligence, industry, zeal: দুই েট্রেম City; ব্রুইর্ম or মহ মান্ধ্র Advocate or pleader; ব্রুম শি Petitioner; মূর্ব প্র Nye-khyu, Petition: মান্ধ্রম Gamester, juggler with words; মান্দা Tobacco; শ্রুমমেন or শ্রুম্ব্রমাম Ch'en-pem-ma, (Colloquial), or শ্রুমশ্রমাম (Literary), Butterfly.

N.B.—Words with the definite particles  $\mathcal{I}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathcal{I}}$ , etc., are generally used without the article  $\mathcal{I}$ , or  $\widehat{\mathcal{I}}$ , unless the latter is intended to express This or That.

2. Besides the particles above referred to, mention may be made of SIFS. K'AN, which, annexed to substantives or verbal roots, is extensively used in the Colloquial to signify a person who, in some capacity or character, is connected with some particular act, state, or thing. Ex.:—

মুন্সানর Guard; বৃষা নান্দ্রনানর Liar: মীনা নে মুন্সানর Magician; স্থান সান্দ্র Author; মান্দ্র নান্দ্র Deceiver: মান্দ্র মান্দর Murderer; মের ফ্র্রিন মান্দ্র Informant.

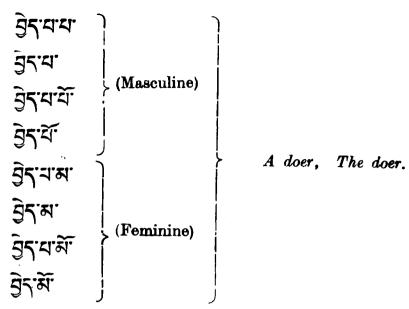
In book-language the following may be found:—

নাম সামার Dancer; মার সামার Guide; দ্রীমার Flutist; মানর Violinist, harpist; নিমার Joiner, carpenter; নানু সামার Bow-maker; মান্ত্র Artisan, worker: মানার Peasant, agriculturist, raiat.

Such compounds in APA (at least in the Literary language) may take the indicative particles  $\mathcal{A}$ ,  $\mathcal{A}$ , or  $\mathcal{A}$ , as expressive not only of the definite or indefinite article but also of gender. Ex.:—

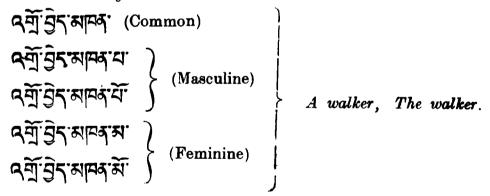
3. Instead of হাম্বি use is sometimes made of the verb ব্রিক্তি To do.





Sometimes, even in the Colloquial, both 55 and 55 are used together, either with or without the Indicative Particles 55, 57, 57, 57, though in the Colloquial these are commonly discarded. Ex.:—

#### Literary.



N.B.—When  $Q_{1}^{2}$ , or  $Q_{2}^{2}$  or the indefinite article  $Q_{2}^{2}$  is used with any of the above, the indicative particle is discarded, e.g.:—

त्र्रें नुद्रमाद्य दें The walker, That walker. त्र्रें नुद्रमाद्य देंपा A walker.

#### COLLOQUIAL.

র্মান্তর্মান্তর্বা Agriculturist, Farmer. এমান্তর্বার্ত্তরামন্ত্র Guide.

निश्र निर्मा ने देशानियः Guarantor. रेंग्राह्म नेत्राह्म Helper.

4. 35, however, is not the only auxiliary that takes the affix 3153 in this way. There are others; for instance, 57 Ex.:—

र्रें र्'न्य्नियाम्ब Arguer, Reasoner.

८८ भूर कुंग सम्बर् Roarer.

हैना में नियान्य Briber. हैश नुप्तान्य Calculator.

In fact, the functions of  $\overline{S}$ ,  $\overline{S}$ , and  $\overline{S}$  in this respect, are very similar to those of the Urdu word y, wālā, or the Persian words کار  $b\bar{a}n$ , کار gar,  $\forall g\bar{a}r$ , اکار  $k\bar{a}r$ , etc., or even the Tibetan particle 시 in words like 피시 Scholar, Monk, Disciple, Novice; 좋다 Water-carrier, Bhīsti; 5.4. Horseman, etc.

Another common affix of a similar nature annexed to noun-5. substantives is A T., or A Maker, Manufacturer, etc. Ex.:—

> ङ्गराज्ञें न  $\left\{\begin{array}{c} Boot-maker. \end{array}\right\}$ न्द्रितंत्र्वेतः Carpenter. দৃষ্টিম'ন্ট্রান' Goldsmith. รฐณากรัฐา Silversmith. রহেম'বর্ত্তা Coppersmith.

6. Abstract Nouns.

In the Colloquial these are seldom used, resort being generally had to an adjective phrase. Thus, instead of saying ক্রমানাইর নিটারী বেরা

In Literary Tibetan abstract nouns are formed by adding 35.

NY1', to the adjective in its full form, that is, not the mere root, but the root plus one of the indicative particles. Ex.:—

된 Easy, but 된다. Easiness, facility.

FIR. Difficult, but 두기유·지경주 Difficulty.

된다 Free, but 된다. 경주 Freedom.

다시 True, but 다시 한다. 기계 기계 Truth.

대한 Young, but 대한 기계 기계 Youth.

라지 Black, but 주지다. 경주 Blackness.

된다 Mad, but 된다. 경주 Madness, Lunacy.

된다 Tedious, but 된다. 경주 Tedium.

### B.—Inflexion.

The Tibetan Noun-Substantive is inflected in relation to:—
1.—Gender.

The names of all males, females and inanimate objects are naturally

masculine, feminine, and common respectively, e.g., & Man (m.): মুষাব্দার Woman (f.); 🔾 Stone (c.).

Nouns ending in Tor Tor Tor Tor with Tor Tr prefixed or affixed, are generally (in the last two cases always) masculine. Ex.:-

Pupil or novice in a monas-ਜੁਕਾਹਾ King, Regent, Temporal ਪਿੱਧਸਾ Boar. Ruler, Rajah. इ.सं or संह Horse. धनाः सं or सं धनाः Hog.

र्थामाभग' Bull-yak.

মুন্দ্রাদ্র Bull.

জেশ্ব Father.

ড়োঁই This old chap; I myself.

সূর্ব তি official chief. ঠ'ন Grandson.

But sometimes nouns in  $rac{r}{r}$  or  $rac{r}{r}$  or  $rac{r}{r}$  are common. Ex.:--

 $\left.egin{array}{l} Beloved\,,\,Sweetheart\,,\ Lover. \end{array}
ight.$   $\left.egin{array}{l} Basket. \end{array}
ight.$ 

মুব্বা Patch.

ন্মান Traveller.
ন্মান সিংল Secret.
নামান সিংল Servant.
নামান Liquid.
নামান Leather.
নামান Bitter buck-wheat.

Nouns with A affixed, or with A affixed or prefixed are generally feminine. Ex.:--

> 55'N' Mare. জে' Mother.

But N' and N' do not always denote the feminine gender. Ex :-

A'SI Leaf.

মৃহ'ম' Lotus.

দান্দান্য Beam of wood.

মুধ্য Bean.

ইংস' Breeches, pants.

퇴직자 Spoon.

RE미리 Shovel, spade.

मिमास Ant.

ឯកញ្ជុះស Hawk, kite.

र्हे5 हैं। Sport, game, play.

ন্য ম Chūmbi.
ন্যান্য Chūmbi.
ন্যান্য ম Friend.
ন্যান্য Evening.
ম্ম Music, cymbals.

सुः नुः निर्धः Grouse. मित्रेनाः से Hedgehog. धुशःसः Knee.

Masculine nouns may be turned into feminine nouns by substituting a feminine affix for a masculine one.

골지디 A man of Lhasa.

দ্রান্দ্রা An Indian.

TTT A Tibetan.

मुन्त्राय or मुन्ते A Chinaman.

प्रभाग A Nepāli.

RIN A woman of Lhasa.

ন্ত্ৰ নাইন A woman of India.
নিইন A woman of Tibet.
নিইন কালি তা ক্ৰাইন A woman of China.
নাম নাম A Nepāli woman.

#### 2.—Number

- (a) There are several signs in Tibetan denoting the plural number. e.g.--
- Tiso. This is the sign commonly used now in the Colloquial with any kind of noun or adjective.
- (b) 35.51 NAM. This is Literary, and is seldom if ever heard in the Colloquial. It is largely used, for instance, in the Tibetan translation of the New Testament. 38757 is used when

things or persons are referred to separately from others, e.g. 다.돛자'지'길' We five.

- (c) বৃদ্য ĎA'. This is an elegant substitute for বুকাৰা
- (d) 3기 CHA'. Another book term. Used also in Sikhim and Būtān with personal pronouns, e.g. 다 3기 We, etc.
- (e) No plural sign at all need be used when, from the context, it is clear that the plural number is implied. In such cases the noun remains in the singular number. Ex.:—

ম্মানার্মানার্মান্ত্রামান্ত্র

- (f) When, however, the plural sign is expressly used, it, and not the noun, nor the adjective, if any, takes the case-sign. Ex.:—
  자기로 기존시키고 및다 기존 기존 기존 기존 기존 기존 The virtuous men received him.
- (g) When expressly used, the plural sign comes after the noun if there is no adjective and no article, definite or indefinite. Ex.:—

रुषामुद्राभिकें अमें भेरामिनेंद्रास्त्र में Men were deceivers ever.

(h) When there is only an adjective after the noun, the plural sign is annexed to the adjective, not to the noun. Ex.:—

มิ:การะบัง ซึ่ง Good men.

(i) If, however, the adjective be used as an attribute predicated of the noun, then the plural sign is annexed to the noun, not to the adjective. Ex.:—

भेर्के प्रश्र प्रेंग्ने । The men are good.

(k) If the noun be distinguished by an article, or distinguished by an article and also qualified by an adjective, the plural sign is annexed to the article.

Ex.:—

おってんぎ!

The or these men.

おってんがってんがってんがっている。

The or those men.

The or these good men.

おってまでいてんがってんがっている。

The or those good men.

भेरेक पत्राधित्रुम्। Those men are good.

#### 3.—CASE.

By way of supplementing what has already been said on this subject in § 25, examples are now given of the Declension of Nouns ending in (1) a vowel, (2) final consonants  $\P$  or  $\Gamma$ ;  $\Gamma$  or  $\Gamma$ ; and  $\Gamma$ ,  $\Gamma$  or  $\Gamma$ 

The particular postpositions given are, of course, only examples out of many that might be used.

#### I.-Noun ending in a Vowel.

## (i) Singular.

A Month, or Moon.

Dat. France To month, or moon.

Loc. and On moon.

Per. Fa. In or during month.

Mod. न्यापि में में में शिक्ष On account of moon or month.

Abl. FIGHT Than month or moon.

Term. as far as moon.

#### PLUBAL.

ਕ਼ੋਰਫੋਂ Months, Moons.

Nom. Voc. Acc. Months, Moons.
Acc. Months, Moons.
Gen. 高口意文 or 意义 Of months, Of moons.
Agent. 高口意义 To months, By moons.
Dat. 高口意文 On moons.
Loc. 高口意文 On moons.

Per. ਕ੍ਰੋਸਿੱਸ In or during months.

Mod. ਕੁਸ਼ਤ ਨੌਸ਼੍ਰੇਸ਼ਤ On account of moons or months.

Abl. 클디션 대통 Than months or moons.

Term. まってんなってい Until months: as far as moons.

## (ii) Similar with Definite Article.

#### SINGULAR.

# ষ্ট না Sun or Day.

Nom. कें सप् The sun or the day. Acc. Gen. Of the sun or day. **ঈ'ম** ৭ ইয়া Agent. By the sun or day. कें सन्दर्भा Dat. To the sun or day. कें सद देव Loc. On the sun. **ক্টিমান্দ্রির** Per. During the day. 3 NA 3 TE Mod. With the sun or day. **ৡয়৻ঽঽ৾৾৾৽য়য়** Abl. Than the sun or day. ৡয়'ঽঽঽ৾<u>য়</u>য়য়য় Term. Towards the sun.

N.B.—In Colloquial the Definite Article is as a matter of fact seldom used.

### PLUBAL.

# ৰূপাৰ্থ কৈ The suns or days.

Nom. Voc. Acc.	<sup>কৃ</sup> ষ' <b>৭</b> ই র্ক্ট	The suns or days.
Gen.	कें सप्तरें हैं दे	Of the suns or days.
Agent.	<i>ঈ</i> 'য়'ঀ৾৾ঀ৾৾৾য়৾য়'	By the suns or days.
Dat.	<del>ૹ</del> ૾ૹૡઽ૾ૺૹૼૼૼૼૼૼૹ	To the suns or days.
Loc.	৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽ ৽	On the suns or days.
Per.	<b>ৡ</b> ৾য়৻ঽৼ৾৾৾ৼৢ৾৻য়	In or during the days.
Mod.	ৡয় <b>ঀ</b> ৼ৾ <b>ঌ৾৾৾</b>	With the suns or days.
Abl.	<b>ৡ</b> .য়.৻৴৴ৄৄ৻৸য়.	Than the suns or days.
Term.	ৡ <sup>৽</sup> য় <sup>৽</sup> ঀৼ৾ <sup>৽</sup> য়৾৾৽ঀয়৽	From the suns or days.

# (iii)—Similar with Indefinite Article.

# द्रमाँद दा विषा A monastery.

Nom. Voc. Acc.	<b>र्</b> जोब-दा-विचा-	A monastery.
Gen.	न्म्रोद्याः विमान्मीः	Of a monastery.
Agent.	न्न्यादाः विमाः मीशः	By a monastery.
Dat.	न्मिन यः विमायः	To a monastery.
Loc.	रमेंद्रियः विमा व्यः	In a monastery.
Per.	(Not used).	(Not used).
Mod.	र्वोद्यःसः दिमा रदः	With a monastery.
Abl.	र्वोत्यः दिनायसः	Than a monastery.
Term.	<b>न</b> म्यान्यः	From a monastery.

N.B.—In conversation উনা, প্রা, and বিনা, in this sense is usually dropped in all cases except the Nominative, or Agentive.

(iv)—Similar with a higher Numeral.

(v)—The same with a Definite Particle.

Nom. Voc. Acc.	<b>बॅरुन</b> र्नुन बॅर	The seven angels.
Gen.	र्थे ३ वर् बर्च दे	Of the seven angels.
Agent.	चॅ १ वर् द रोश	By the seven angels.
Dat.	र्थे अन्तर्क्राया	To the seven angels.
	etc., etc.	

The same in the Singular with Cardinal. (vi)

Nom. Voc. Acc.	र्थे ३ न पुन्य		The seventh angel.
Gen.	स्. ३ पर् ४ पर्		Of the seventh angel.
Agent.	র্ডিন্রব্রধার		By the seventh angel.
Dat.	कें ३ पर्वे प्राप्त		To the seventh angel
	etc.,	etc.	

(vii) Similar with Definite Article.

Nom. Voc. Acc.	र्थे अन्दर्भे दि	The first angel.
	्रॅं?३: <b>५</b> ८:यॅ:५५ैंदे.	Oj the first angel.

Agent. 건경 독자 By the first angel.

Dat. 건경 독자 To the first angel.

etc.. etc.

(viii) When, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the former must be put in the genitive case, and the case-sign must be attached to the noun, or to the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any. Ex.:—

মনাইনি দ্রীর্বাধ্বন্ধা Good behaviour.

মনাইনি দ্রীর্বাধ্বন্ধা From good behaviour.

মনাইনি দ্রীর্বাধ্বনার By this good behaviour.

মনাইনি মেনানারি মানার মি By a good deed.

মনাইনি মেনানার মা To good deeds.

মনাইনি মেনানার মা To those good deeds.

# II.—Noun ending in T, or C'

মুদা Sheep. Nom. Sheep. Voc. Acc. Of the sheep. Gen. মুনানাম By the sheep. Agent. শু**শ'ম'** To the sheep. Dat. etc., etc. বিদ' Tree. Nom. Tree. Voc.  $\mathbf{Acc}.$ বিশেষী Of the tree. Gen. श्रिप्तां By the tree. Agent. ARM To the tree. Dat.

etc.,

etc.

III.—Noun ending in 5, 5 or 81

ቫ5' Tibet ; ዴፕ Delegate ; ኤষ Costume.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is not the agentive sign is not the agentive sign is

IV.—Noun ending in 5, 8, 5 or 21

कें समिन Buyer; झुरा Boot; मुँदाहिर City; हें सिया Coal.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is and the agentive sign is It must be remembered, however, that in Colloquial it is allowable to pronounce all these signs in and

§ 30.—THE ADJECTIVE.

#### I.—Form and Place.

(i) There is little or no structural difference between the noun and the adjective. In fact, the latter may, for the most part, be regarded merely as a noun performing qualifying functions with respect to some other noun or verbal substantive.

As a rule the adjective follows the noun, and then it is the adjective and not the noun which takes the case-sign. If the adjective is distinguished by a following article, definite or indefinite, or a demonstrative pronoun, it is the article or the pronoun and not the adjective which takes the case-sign. So, the adjective, and not the noun, takes the sign of the plural, if there is no article or demonstrative pronoun If there is, the article or pronoun takes the sign.

If, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the adjective is put in the genitive case, and the case-sign is annexed to the noun, or to the article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any.

EXAMPLES:-

बिसी दमा से दिश्व के दिन किया । That black cat saw a white mouse. अर्थेट दिन्।

लेकिन्यार्थिक है है जेन या देता

The black cat has caught the mouse.

माञ्चमादगादार्थे दिन्दे दिन्दे स्टिन्दे । माञ्चमात्रमादार्थे दिन्दे स्टिन्दे स्टिन्दे । माञ्चमात्रमाद्देश स्टिन्द्रमादार्थे दिन्दे स्टिन्दे स्टिन्

White leopards are uncommon.

These white leopards are valuable.

These beautiful white beasts of prey kill other wild animals.

Those crimson clouds are very beautiful.

(ii) A very common practice in Colloquial is to turn what we would call a relative clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

म्बर्भामक् से दे।

The man who killed the wolf. Literally, the wolf-killing man.

র্মানর-স্থানর-স্থান্ত্রিন-স্যা-ই or র্মানর্থর-

The wolf that killed the man.

(iii) The idiomatic use of this affix  $\sqrt[3]{3}$  is undoubtedly most difficult to understand, for Colloquially it may express the passive as well as the active voice. For instance,  $\sqrt[3]{3}$   $\sqrt[3]{3}$  signifies, not only The man who kills or killed, but also the man who was or has been killed. Probably the difficulty arose with the alleged Colloquial custom of using the perfect root of most verbs even in the present tense. If only that custom were not in vogue, it would be possible to use present roots in present tenses, and perfect roots in past tenses, and confine the use of  $\sqrt[3]{3}$  to the active voice, and use the past participle of the verb for the passive voice alone. Ex.:—

मार्केन् आमन्त्रमी से ने , or के मार्केन् अमन्द्रने ।

The man who kills.

**নমন্'ম**নিশ্বী' ম' दे', or ম' নমন্' মানশ্ব' ।

The man who killed.

The man who was killed.

This can be done, of course, even as things are; nevertheless it remains a fact that, in Colloquial, সমান্ত্ৰী মান্ত্ৰী মান্ত্ৰ, and মান্ত্ৰামান্ত্ৰী আমান্ত্ৰী মান্ত্ৰী মান্ত

See § 31, IX, A, on the use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb 35% To do, for the purpose of distinguishing the Active from the Passive Voice.

(iv) The Relative Idea is also frequently expressed by turning a participial clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

रेर क्षेत्र पुनुष्ठान् ए नुष्ट नुष्ट अर्थेट A growing child (a child that is growing) will eat anything it gets.

ন্থা (or Literary নিংমান) দুর্বি, The man whom you sent yesterday is dead. Literally, The yesterday day-by-you-sent man is dead.

The participle, being here an adjective, may also follow the noun. Thus:—

| สามา เล็ร เป็ม มี เมาะ เลาร์ เมาะ โลง The man, etc.

Now, let another adjective be inserted, thus:-

「中本に行うでうれている。説であるに、道で The good man whom you sent yesterday is dead.

Or thus:

The negative is inserted thus:-

मिश्रामिं भीश्रास्त्रम्। संदेशीश्रास्त्रम्।

The good man whom you did not send yesterday is dead.

# (v) Use of the Particles 4, 4, 4, 4, 4, 4,

If we desired to be very correct as regards the particles annexed to adjectival roots, we would use  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$ , or  $\mathcal{N}$ , with a masculine noun, and  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$ , with a feminine noun;  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$ , being more properly employed with the Indefinite Article, and  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$ , with the Definite Article, when masculine nouns are concerned; while  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$ , may be used with either the Indefinite or the Definite Article when the noun is feminine. In common parlance  $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}}$  is often pronounced pu.

Ex.:—
ন্ত্রিবৃদ্ধ A black dog ন্ত্রিমবৃদ্ধ A or the black bitch.
কুর্দ্ধ মূল্ম মূল্ম মূল্ম মূল্ম A or the white mare.

But, as a matter of fact, these distinctions are not observed Colloquially, and a Tibetan would express himself thus:—

वित्रमार्यः विमा	$A\ black\ dog.$
इ <sup>.</sup> खॅ. <b>५</b> ण्र-थॅ।	)
इस्दिगार सिन्।	The white horse.
हु के दम दे विग।	A black bitch.
र्जेर्'अ'र्गर'चें।	)
र्केन्यानगर सिन्।	The white mare.

However, there are many adjectives which, even in Colloquial, are seen in "and "and "without reference to gender. Ex.:--

र्ड्डेब्स.	Mad, insane.	र्हेन्यः	Wet.
र्गेशयः	Necessary, needful.	श्र-दमान्यः	Wrong, incorrect.
নাধ্যম:ঘ:	New.	<b>क्र</b> ट.श.	All.
केट.त.	Old.	<u>ব্</u> যূ্খ:ম	Ordinary, vulgar.
मबिंदे.दा.	Young.	<b>Ē</b> ₩.₩.	Sham.

There are also one or two seen in  $\overline{\mathfrak{S}}$  without reference to gender. Ex.:—

In the Literary language the adjective, in its root form alone, is often seen immediately preceding the noun. Ex.:—

So, when the adjective has a particle and precedes the noun, Literary Tibetan follows the same rule as obtains in the Colloquial, of putting the adjective in the genitive case. Ex.:—

But even in the Colloquial it is allowable, for brevity's sake, to form adjectival expressions by placing before a noun an adjective minus its particle. Ex.:—

বে নাম্বান ক্রিমা স্থা নাম্বান ক্রিমান ক্রেমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রেমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রেমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রেমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রেমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্রিমান ক্র

So also:—

ब्रॅंब मार्चेर सुक्ष सुक्ष सुक्ष देत्।

Formerly Tibet was a secret (or hidden) country.

Instead of: --

स्वायते स्वायः (or स्वायः स्वायः स्वायः (or

Formerly Tibet, etc.

(vi) Adjectives are also sometimes formed from nouns and postpositions, the latter being put in the genitive case, and the whole expression made to precede the noun that it qualifies. Ex.:—

Some time ago a European soldier was living in Tibet.

त्रेच। ग्रुंट्युज्यक्षामन्त्रश्चरम्ब्रुशः राष्ट्रिक्युःमुःस्यामस्यसःक्षेत्रःग्रुशः

Some of the many great ancient empires are still remembered.

बिसिप्तिसम्बि (or हिपे) हम्बिर वडमामारेत्।

The cat has broken the stone jug.

प्रमास्त्रमास्त्रमामी ब्राय स्त्रम् होत् स्त्रमामी स्त्रमास्त्रमा स्त्रमा स्त

I live (or have a dwelling place) in an upper room of that house.

The adjectives to which attention is drawn in the foregoing illustrations are, in the first টু ব্লিম্ম European: in the second, মুব্দা Ancient; in the third ইনি or ইবি Stone; and, in the fourth, মুম্ম্নিনি Upper.

(vii) Some adjectives consist merely of a primitive repeated. Ex.:—

あ可る可 Broken. 河東・河東・ 河下・河下 Concave. 河東・河東・ フト・フト Straight. フス・ファ・ Flat.

(viii) Others consist of two primitives, similar as regards their consonantal form, but with different vowels. Ex.:—

(ix) Or of a repeated dissyllable with a difference in the vowels. Ex.:—

(x) Or of two different dissyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:-

るべいて Raving.

(xi) Or of two different monosyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:-

Far, distant, remote.

독대한 그래 Measureless, immeasurable.

독대한 교육 Immense.

(xii) As to the formation of Abstract Nouns from adjectives, see § 29, A. 6.

(xiii) English adjectives ending in able and ible are usually rendered in Colloquial Tibetan by 35, NYXX, or En'o', or Ch'o', or Ch'o', added to the root of the verb. Ex.:—

ময়শার্থীরেম ক্রিনানার or ধ্রমক্রিন। Is this road passable?

মনাগমেসাশ্র প্রমান্ত্রী তা প্রমান্ত No, the road is not passable.

मुना रु त्र नाय रेना नाय। Is this stream fordable?

यमाश मुना रु ते माय रेना स्ट्री No, the stream is not fordable.

वित्र में रेना रेना रेना रेना प्रिता He is ready to go.

E'त्रिन्द्रात्र्रात्र्रा This tea is very drinkable. स्मार्भिमार्द्रात्रा That pastry is not eatable.

उत्थमात्री कें तर्दे किन हो तर्म। These goods are not saleable.

र्गोद सर्हेना दे सर्वे प्रवासित प्रदेश God is invisible.
र्गोद सर्हेना दे गुद समिद प्रदेश God is knowable.

(xiv) The Literary equivalent of 英可, or 秀, is 5年中 Rung-wa, or 5年 Rung. Ex.:—

न्द्रिंदिन्स्याङ्ग्डिट्रं, or द्वाः This spectacle is terrible, or calculated to terrify.

E'T'A 其下了别为下下, or 为下南本之人! This tea is not drinkable, or fit to drink.

录机内介: 黑下部为下下, or 为下南部之人! This food is not eatable. or fit to eat.

Sometimes, however, the supinal particle &, 5, or 5, attached to the verbal root, is omitted, and the particle 5 after 55 is also dropped. Ex.:—

42.51.42.4841412 C.C.

This sight is terrible.

हारीप्त श्रदास्त्री सारी पा प्रश्रदा का प्रश्रदा की

That tea is undrinkable.

35.4.31

ब्रह्म त्रदेश ब्रह्म के क्षेत्र का ब्रह्म द्वार

This food is uneatable.

# 4:251

(xv) Where a noun is qualified by two or more adjectives joined by the conjunction and, or or, the construction is as follows:—

श्चित्रपनार्यः दर्धनार्यः (or क्रेनार्यः) ह्मिट अना से दिट हुना से (or हेना से ) कैं। ম্যানাধামানভূ।

Good and bad (addled)

Three or four men.

(xvi) NEGATIVE ADJECTIVES corresponding to such as begin in English with Un, In, Il, Im, Ir, or Dis, or end in less, are not very much used, Tibetans preferring to use an affirmative adjective and to put the verb in the negative. Ex.:-

Instead of saying:-

मिं भे केंश शेमश से द साम र दे द

He is an irreligious man.

A Tibetan would prefer to say:—

मिं में केंबा सेमस उदास देता

He is not a religious man.

However, when such negative adjectives are employed, they are formed with the aid of the Colloquial negative expressions &, &, and মান্ and the Literary expressions মানুষ, মানে, নুমা, and অমা

Ex.:--रम्शियाम्  $\left\{ Unnecessary. \right\}$ 

 $iggl\{Impossible.$ 

Without fault.

श्रात्रायः	TY 7	मक्षेद्रायणुर सेदः	) Diameter 1
देशकेर	Unbecoming.	श.मोश.त.	Disrespectful.
शेशश्रन्माद सेद	Cheerless.	<b>स-र्</b> मायः	Incorrect, wrong.
শৃক্তু'ইন্	Immortal.	स्राप्त्रियःयः	Having no leisure.
म्र्यें मुंग्सेर	Immovable.	মার্থুগ্রামা	Unheard of.
55 <sup>-83</sup> 5' }	Unbelieving.	ষ্ট্রের্ম	Immature, raw, callow.
शर्रायः )	o no concoving.	<b>র্ট</b> -র্ক:মৃ <b>র</b> -	Immodest.
क्रुंद:हे:सेर्	Merciless.	व्यव ५५ से ५	Illiterate.
रे'ब'शेर्	Hopeless.	क्रॅंश होर	- · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
외점다.어학.	Infinite.	भ्र.श्र.भ.त. अन्य भ्र.)	Without faith.
<b>루터리</b> ,저희.	Immeasurable.		,
59°में5' । но	~ 37	<b>ਯੋश.</b> ਹੋਯ.	Incorporeal.
समें सेर	adless, Unsurmounted.	<b>५</b> र्	${\it Passion less}.$
वेरामेर )		र्ष्ट्रचा चंज.	Sinless.
र्वेर हो द्वाव } Wi	thout riches.	ন্নিমশ-মे-	Lawless, Illicit.

(xvii) Sometimes, in the Colloquial, the Active Participles  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ - $\mathsf{SI}$ -for inanimate objects, and  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ - $\mathsf{SI}$ - $\mathsf{For}$  animate objects, meaning which is, or are, who is, or are, are used adjectivally. Ex.:—

ञ्चास्य निम्पाद क्षिम् निम्पाद क्षिम निम्पाद क्षिम् निम्पाद क्षिम निम्प

(xviii) In Literary Tibetan adjectives are frequently formed by adding to a noun, or to its root, or to a whole phrase, one of the expressions 35° Chān, 对为"Dān, 对为"Dān-Chān, 勾称" Chā, 和口口,以为"Dān-Chān,为我们" Chā, 和口口,以为"Dān-Chān",为我们 Chā,我只见了,NGĀ,and 双方"Yö",and so representing that class of English adjectives which end in ful, y, ous, eous, ious, ate, ent, ic, ish, ed, ly, ive, etc.

Ex.:-

ই: থৰ. Intelligent, Sagacious. **र्के**5 खु Punctilious, moderate. রব.এব. Beneficial, useful. নানাধা.প্রথ. Renowned, famous रेब उद Costly, expensive. **वर्**देर:इक् Passionate, amorous. ইনা,উপ. Rocky. दमाद द्वाद Blissful, joyous. ₩**4.24.81**Ed. Talented, literate, accomplished. र्देब:ॲर् Intelligent. बॅर इब उब Wealthy, opulent. मानेराष्ट्रवास्त्र Full of moisture. निम्राह्मद उद Full of energy. ষ্ট্রাদা'নতথা Sinful. মান্ম নিম্বর্দ্ধর A perfectly accomplished scholar. শ্রিমের্ক্রমান্তর Having a pretty face. मिरी स्वाप्य अप Having an ugly mouth.

কর' is also said to be sometimes used thus:—
ন্ত্রামান নিম্মান বিন্ত্রামান কর' instead of ন্ত্রামান মানি নিম্মান কর' mayer-wheel: but ন্ত্রামান নিম্মান কর' would seem to be the more correct. See, however, § 31, V, (b).

Instead of constructing an adjective out of the root, the particle, and the affix 55, resort is often had to the root alone plus the affix 5' J'A, or CHA. Ex.:—

From ANICIST may be formed ANICIST Very learned.

## II.—Augmenting of adjectives.

This can be done in several ways: -

(a) By simply repeating the adjective, either in the shape of the primitive root, or of the root with the particle. Ex.:—

পূলাপূলা

Very crooked.

Hূলামানুলামা

Very silly.

Very sour.

NEX.মামে

Very sweet.

বর্তনামানর্তনামা

Very dirty.

দার্জমান্তমান্য

Very clean.

ইন্দ্রিমা

Very early in the morning.

Yery late.

(b) By repeating the adjective, in any of its forms, with WT YANG, inserted between them. In the Colloquial WT becomes GT 'ANG, after consonants other than T, 5, T, and N | Ex.:—

지존되'WE'전환시 Very beautiful. 절되'WE'절되시 Very thick.

ऑद 5द प्राप्त 5द। Very learned.

₩Ľ also becomes 戊Ľ after vowels, both in the Literary language and in Colloquial. Ex.:—

ब्रुजिदाः (Lit.). WE'र्सिदाः WE'र्सिदाः WE'र्सिदाः WE'र्सि | Very light (Coll.).

In the Literary language WC' becomes JC' KYANG, after final consonants I, 5, I, and I Ex.:--

CAMERA! Very true.

뷁다.교본,뷁다

Very obscure

र्ह्या.ग्रीट.र्ह्या।

Very neat.

य्याक्षेर्ण्टाय्याकेर्। Very narrow.

(c) By use of the affix & Сн'E signifying emphasis generally. Ex .:--

श्रेमार्ग के.

Extremely sinful.

म्प्रेर रें के Exceedingly brilliant.

देबर्ग के

Very precious.

The above, however, is more Literary than Colloquial. In the Colloquial केंद्र भैं added to the root, is more common, but it is often used merely to form the adjective, and not so much to augment its force. Ex.:-

> ₹.ga.<u>zī</u>. Precious.R5'E3'E' Brilliant. तुःम्बिरक्षिः केषः Intellectual.

ध्रेमान्द्रेन Sinful.

(d) By inserting 5.35. Very, immediately before the adjective, or by adding স্থাইন Very, to the adjectival root :—

नेंद्र'भूद'र्5'रुट'द्रमाद'त्रशामना'र्रे। Tibetan is very difficult.

र'ॡ'मादरा'र्क'शमा'र्केर'रेर।

The weather just now is very hot.

Certain other adverbs may be inserted in the same way when the sentence is a negative one. Ex.:--

वर्नः क्रान्द्रश्चायाः अर्द्रः । विष्ठः क्रान्द्रम् । व्राप्त्रम् । व्राप्त्रम् । व्राप्त्रम् । व्राप्त्रम् ।

This is quite (or absolutely improper.

He is not right at all.

That statement is not at all true.

### III.—THE COMPARATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this Tibetans make use of the postpositions II, in the Colloquial, and IN or IN PX (IN WX, after vowels, or final I, or IN or IN px (IN WX, after vowels, or final I, or IN or IN px or IN

मिट्य दे स्वरं ते दे ।

This house is higher than that one. Literally, Than that house this high is.

ব্রমান্ত্রমা (pronounced Den-jong)

Tibet is colder than Sikhim.

यस (or अस ) वेर् खुयानु हर्से केर्

८६मा हेदायात्मशाळेंद्रा श्रेमशास्त्र प्ताप्ता. र देर्।

A religious man is happier than a worldling.

ই র্ক্তামান্ত্র ক্রিন্তর ক্রিন্তর ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র কর্ন্তর ক্রিন্ত্র Philosophers are happier than ritualists.

মানব্র ক্রিমান্তর্বের ক্রেমান্তর Ascetics (meditators) are happier than professors.

(b) When there is no expressed object with which to compare the subject, an object may be supplied by means of 3 This or 3 That. Ex.:—

तर्भाक्षाक्षां य त्रामा A higher house than this.

देशका क्षेत्राक्षां य त्रामा प्रति क्षा | A fleeter horse than that.

दिशका क्षेत्राक्षां क्षा य विषा | A counsel exceeding this.

(c) In the Colloquial the comparative degree of certain common adjectives has a special form. For instance, the comparative of WATT Good, is WATT Better; of STI Much, it is STI More; of STI Thick, it is STI Thick, it is STI Thicker; of STI Large, big, great, it is STI Larger, bigger, greater. Even with them the same construction in AN is employed. Ex.:—

(d) The particle belonging to an adjective is sometimes vulgarly conjugated, i.e. transmuted into  $\mathfrak{A}$ ,  $\mathfrak{A}$ , or  $\mathfrak{A}$ , according to the rule with reference to the last letter of the root. It is better, however, to avoid this. Ex.:—

श्चे प्रमाद प्रदेश हैं देश हैं देश हैं हैं कि क्षा This woman is indeed pretty.

be rendered अहिंश गुँ देर्

ক্রমেন্ট্রেমেন্ট্র may be This wine is not good. rendered অদ্যদীসেন্দ্র

But not where  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ 'S, etc., has the sense of To have. Ex.:—

# भेर्ने प्रसाद है क्या मूर्चीय श.स. श्री तर्मा। वर्षेत्र प्रमान प्रमान स्थान स्यान स्थान स्यान स्थान स

This man has wiser friends than that one.

### IV.—THE SUPERLATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this a universal comparison is resorted to, the subject being placed, at option, either before or after the expression used for the universal comparison. This latter may take numerous forms such as:—

ष्ट्राध्यक्ष. ব্রমধা ওই মেধা. Than all. चाट.चा.जश्र. 됐다.[고.너쇠. শুৰ্ শেষা (Literary) क्षट सदी बट बस वस्रक्ष स्ट्राणु वट वस माट.मार्च.बट.बङ्गा From among all. स्रदामदे क्रा শ্ব-শ্বাৰ্থ (Literary) क्रटासदे न्यीय दश ধ্বমধ্য ডব্-গ্রি-বৃদ্ধীন্য ধর্মা म्द्रम्द्रिन्गुंभादश From among all. स्रामिते र्गेयादश নুবান্ত্রীনের্কা (Literary)

Ex.:--

ন্ত্ৰ:মান্ত্ৰ

स्रामायशादायदी सम्बित्राशा मेर्

This is the swiftest horse.

धुर्त्यमार्कट्सि र्ने जियान्यः हें तरे रेन श्रद्धः तरेर् or के मी रेन् (or के में रेन्।

This stone is the most valuable of all well secured things.

रेन्यें के or नियम सम्मानित (or के मी) रेर्।

Gold is the most precious of all metals (meltable things).

N.B.—Note that まずご in its conjugated form becomes ま

degree is to affix 河南 Shō to the root of the adjective.

The order in which the sentence is constructed does not much matter, and even the use of 의자 (in Literature 의자, 의자, or ¬자) is optional. Ex.:—

इ.पर्ने.श्रमुचिश.पूर्श.रूर्।

This horse is the fleetest.

रेब से के दे बर बड़ा (or न्यूया बड़ा)

Gold is the dearest of metals.

मार्शर रे ब प्रद के में बारे रा

If the speaker likes he may insert ই THE, after ব্যা thus:—

5'বেই সেন্সাম নিমাই ইবা

This horse is the fleetest.

र्हें वर्रे इंके वेंबर (रे) रेरा

This stone is the most valuable.

N.B.  $\rightarrow \tilde{\zeta}$   $\rightarrow \tilde{\zeta}$  like many other words in MS., is often abbreviated into  $\tilde{\zeta}$   $\tilde{\zeta}$ 

स्रःशःम्ब्राटः विरः अदः स्त्रः (देः) देद।

Lhasa is the most transcendent of cities.

N.B.—되지지 is often abbreviated into 학기, and 오직되지.

(c) Yet another expression used to indicate the superlative idea is \*\*ATO CH'O', signifying The best, The most, etc. It is a Literary word, and only rarely comes into the Colloquial. It may be either prefixed or affixed to the word that it qualifies, and when prefixed should be put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

श्रक्षेत्रामी यदमा

The chief noble or lord.

मळेंग मी स।

The chief mother: the goddess Dolma.

शक्रुंगामी कुमाश।

The principal woman in a family.

सर्द्रेमा मी सर्द्रम।

The best of the best.

In Literary Tibetan the substantive is put in the genitive case when राज्य is affixed. Ex.:—

বৰেন্ট্ৰেমইন।

The best among the good or noble.

ব্ম:ঘই:মইন।

The holiest.

५ में इ'यदे' सर्केम।

The Chief of Rarities; the rarest Being or Object; the Supreme Being.

पद्मारा-पर्-सर्थ्न।

The sublimest, most excellent.

रेदि सर्देम।

The best or greatest of men.

मामश्रायदे अर्थेना र्यू।

The wisest or most learned.

In the Colloquial है, if used at all, is sometimes prefixed and sometimes affixed, but neither it nor the substantive is put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

or:--

श्रुचाःसूटः। The Chief Protector. Anything excellent of its kind; र्गाव सर्वेमा। also an abbreviation of यदे सर्वेग। मर्केमारमाय। The highest joy, rapture, bliss. व्यम्शःसर्वेम। The noblest, sublimest. रें सर्हेग। The most excellent taste, delicious. প্রামধ্য সমূদ্র । The wisest, most learned. मिल्टि सकें मा के बर्धे। The very utmost attention. भु.यु.शक्र्मा, or सु.शक्र्मा। The Chief of Beings, Buddha. श्रीसळेंगार्टित्।

মান্ত্ৰী is also used thus in Literary Tibetan :—

सर्केमान्द्राष्ट्रहर्सेद्रा Nobles and commonalty. शक्रमारदायाया The great and the vulgar. मर्केमान्सक। Great and small. निद'र अर्देग। The very excellent or superior.

Thou best of men!

V.—OTHER METHODS OF COMPARISON.

The Tibetan rendering of English phrases constructed with As..as, may be illustrated thus:-

दायादी ब्रह्मामादा स्रादा (ब्रह्मा: (ब्राह्मा स्रादा स्राह्मा Please give me as much (or many) of that as possible. लेगा, or मादालेदारेमा. or मादाले विमा or मारे वे विमा महर रेमारा मिष्ट.।

Please give, etc.

or :-

चित्रः स्चित्रः चित्रः । र.ज.टे.वश्यः चित्रः विचः रा.टे.टे.चो.रटः

Please give, etc.

विराधनी विष्य प्रमाणिक प्रमाणिक विषय क्षेत्र क्षेत्र

Will you come as far as to yonder house?

त्रात्में मीत्र्पृत्वा। व्याप्ते मीत्र्पृत्वा।

This road goes about as far as to that house.

यन्। विदःर्श्वेदः अर्थे ये व्येदः यः उम्रादः ना रदः दि रे प्यदः व्येदः ।

As high as that tree-trunk is (may be) this one also is.

प्रामुशर्भिर्यम्बिर (or ब्राम्बिर), or ब्राम्भिर) भेरासरीरामान्यस्थिर।

As far as I know, that is so: Literary, If it be according to the knowledge I possess, it is just like that.

वर्षेयः श्रूटः । स्राप्तरः वः स्राप्तरं रें.) दशःश्रुःसरेतः च्रुपः श्रूटः । As soon as he rose I fired.

प्रति द्योकः (दे) स्ट्रिंट कुँ द्योकः द्राः भेषाक्षः कृषः महिषाको स्ट्रेट ।

My book is as good as yours: Literally, My book is equally good-bad with yours.

§ 31.—THE PRONOUN.

I -PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(a) I.

Commonest forms in Colloquial.

בוגע Expressive of humility. Chiefly used in Tsang.

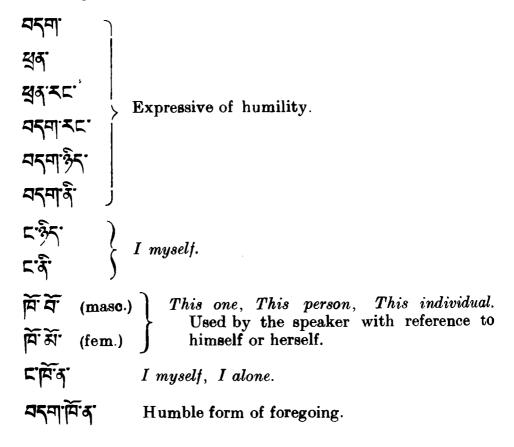
Like Persian אוני Bandeh.

ביבר־בר־

Emphatic forms.

This old fellow or chap. Used by the speaker in reference to himself, but only in a comic way.

The following are Book-terms:—



The following are Colloquially used by the Kyrong-pas, or Nipal Frontier Tibetans:—

다. Tronounced almost like 짜 지다. I myself.

We ourselves

(b) Thou.

Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of \( \overline{\beta} \overline{\beta}'\) is either \( \overline{\beta} \overline{\beta}'\), or \( \overline{\beta} \overline{\beta}'\) \( \overline{\beta} \overline{\beta}'\) \( Thy, Thine: \) and the Agentive is either 35.38 or 35.38 By thee.

> টিন'
>
> | Colloquial honorifies. Used in official correspondence. <sup>3</sup>5'ጙር' (pl. <sup>3</sup>5'3ቫ') met with in dialects. B5'35' Polite Literary forms.
> B5'F4' ট্রিইন Literary honorific Other Literary forms.

(c) HE, or SHE.

Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of T is either TT, or TTTT His, and the agentive is either AN, or AN

> Polite forms, Literary and Colloquial. 反:禁む Honorific form, Literary and Colloquial. Literary forms.

Other forms for SHE :-

The genitive of N is either NA or NRA, and the Agentive is either NA, or NRA,

# (d) IT.

There is no special term for this pronoun. It is often not rendered at all. Ex.:—

If used at all it is generally rendered by  $\hat{\zeta}$ , or  $\hat{\zeta}$ . Ex.:—  $\hat{\beta}$   $\hat{\zeta}$   $\hat{$ 

Usually Pronouns are not repeated in ordinary conversation after the first reference.

# (e) REFLEXIVES.

Self, One's self, is the commonest expression, both in the Colloquial and in Book-language. Other Book-terms with the same meaning are: -55, 35, 55, 55, and 55, and 55, and 55,

II.—Declension of Personal Pronouns.

This follows the same rules as apply in the case of Substantives. Ex.:—

	Singular.				
Nom. Voc. Acc.	۲,	I.			
Gen.	۲ģ.	Of me.			
Agent.	Ľ₩.	By me.			
Dat.	<b>Ľ.ď.</b>	To me.			
Loc.	۲.ط.	On me.			
Per.	_				

Mod. Against me. Abl. Than me.

Nom. Acc.

Gen. C'AC'A

८.४८.चीझ. By me. Agent.

C'AC'A' To me. Dat.

Plural.

We.

ς τές · O) us.

C'ÉN' By us.

ς. ₹. On us

్చ్ ్ Against us.

L'Z'AN Than us.

टर्ड दे स्मिश्राम Towards us.

L'ES From us.

にってる。We.

# And so forth.

管方話 You. 管方話句 Of you, yours. 管方話れ By you. Nom. Voc. F. D. Of thee, Thy. Acc. Gen. ቻኝ ሧ፝፞፞፞ቚ By thee. Agent.

And so forth.

Or:-Gen.

鬥气養氣 Of you, yours. HT:RA' Of thee, Thy.

BTSTAN By thee. Agent

קֿק־אָב" Thou, is declined like בּאָב" I.

#### And so forth.

ቸር He, is declined like ር'ጜር' I.

হাঁ She, is declined like 🏋 He.

শ্ব This humble one, has for genitive স্ত্ৰ, and for Agentive স্থা মহ্ম This humble one, has for genitive স্, and for Agentive স্থা All those ending in ম', ম', ম', ম', and ম' are declined like

Those ending in 5 are declined like 75 Thou, save as regards the forms in 3

N.B.—Plural Nouns do not take the plural sign  $\tilde{s}$  if from the context it is clear that plurality is intended [See § 29 B, 2 (e)], but plural Pronouns always take the sign, except when they are qualified by Numeral Adjectives.

EXAMPLE:--

## III. THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN.

The following are examples of KC Self, One's self, used reflexively:—

ংশ:४८:४वो.शुश्रशः कुबे:तूरः टू.जैशःब. २७७१:शुश्रश्रशः कुबे:तूरः टू.जैशःब.

If I know myself spiritually I shall see God.

মের্দ্র মর্ক্রল মের্নী প্রথম ক্রবর্দর । মর্দ্র বের মার্দ্র নিমানী প্রথম বিশ্বর

If I see God spiritually I shall know myself.

गुःश्चरदःदःनेशःनेग।

Man, know thyself.

भ्राम्बर्भामक्त्रेशास्त्रामक्त्री

The murderer has killed himself.

(A) 4.44 | or (A) 4.44 |

Did you keep the money for your-self?

र्देव-दे-रट-वशःग्रुटः।

The idea originated from myself.

हुश.रेश.प्र्या.स्ट.मी.<u>स</u>्येयश.ज.पंत्रेय.

The dog pulled the bone towards itself.

हश्रायर हैं नेश गुँव त्रृन्। शेश्रश्र केर (or र्ट्स या) महिमा ह्या र्ट्स

The soul alone really knows itself.

दा.क्ष्ट्र, बट.ज.क्षेत्र.ची.परीचा। श्र.चिष्यंता.क्ष्र्यः ट.क्ष्ट्र, चोषशः क्ष्यः चिष्यः

Other men are ourselves incarnate under other conditions.

He that speaketh of (from) himself, seeketh his own glory (John vii. 18).

にまってには自む。本村、村、当に一

I am not come of myself (John vii. 28).

Or better:-

दाश्चेर दामी केर्पुं (or र्देवपुं) व्यद्ध

I am not, etc.

८श.वृ.४८.घ७व.वश.वृ.ल८.चेर.यृ.वीय।

I can of mine own self do nothing (John v. 30).

Or better:-

I can, etc.

दशःगुदःरदःमीः मिस्रशःशेःमिर्हेदः दे ।

I judge not mine own self (1 Cor. iv. 3).

Or better:-

गुैं भेर। इं, or मिस्रसम्बर्धरायामिस्रस्थित or बार्बर

I judge not, etc.

मिन्स्मीर्निन्दुः हे नेरा

What sayest thou of thyself (John i. 22).

Or better:-

हिन्दर्भि र्सूर यायम कु के पेर्

What sayest, etc.

**५५**:हिर्र्र्र्र्स्मिश्चर्

Askest thou this of thyself? (John xviii. 34).

Or better:-

ট্রিন'লীঝ'এনীট্রিন'ব্দেশীট্রি'এর্নিন'ঝঝ' ই'ন'মীর'র ।

Askest thou this, etc.

चेत्रपर प्रमुक्त स्टास में प्रस्त के ज्ञान स्टास में प्रस्त के प्

Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted (Matt. xxiii. 12).

## IV.—COMPOUNDS IN SC' RANG.

(a) KC frequently forms the first part of a compound. Ex.:—

٦**٣**351

Self; One's self.

২८.গুখর।

One's own soul.

۲۲:31

Each; each respectively; Hon. for you.

रटरदे श्राम्या।

Each has hold of his own leadingstring (D).

メによれる当に!

Each at his own door.

रदःरेदे से दुदः न

Spontaneous; of itself.

रट.सेनाश.ज।

Spontaneously.

도:**권**교환.ŋ화

Self-sprung.

۲Ľ.ÂĽ. ا

way op any

श.रची.तप्.रचट.चीश.सैचीश.कु.रट.फू.

By ignorance one's future was of its own self destroyed.

नुस्रश्याय रहार्ने क्षानित्।

Love seeketh not its own (N.T.).

Bringeth not about its own ends.

Or better:-

Love, etc.

**नुसस्यारार्द्र्यन्तेर**नुरुन्नुः स्रेतर्नुन्।

I shall go to the house of my own accord.

ट.रट.पर्वेट.प्रट.ज र मूं.म्री.ल्या

Let us (the two of us) go hence together.

रत्मकेशक्षेत्रः भारत्रे वहार में दें।

One's own perception, intelligence, and happiness, three things (D).

रटर्मारटम्बर्भरास्टर्म्स्या

You will take your own life (D).

**२८**:श्रेंमा'२८'मीश'माउँ५'गी'२५।

(b)  $\mathbb{Z}^{-}$  also often forms the second part of a compound. Ex.:—

सॅ'रहा	An unmarried man.
Ñ'AC'I	A spinster; a woman by herself.
र्-र-।	The very same, exactly, quite so.
र-मान्स्याधेदः रे-स्याधेदः	It is just so; it is precisely so.
श्रुक्तेर्	Quite early in the morning.
ले <b>र</b> -चें-र्-र- ले-चें-र-र- स्र-चें-र-र-	With negative—Not much, Not many.
に、 <b>イロ・ガー・ガー・ガー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー・オー</b>	By the mere (just by) meeting with me.
<u> </u>	A man all by himself; just a man.

## V.—Possessive Pronouns.

## 1.—ORDINARY PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(a) Possessive Pronouns are formed by putting the Personal Pronouns in the Genitive case. They may either precede or follow the noun or object in respect of which possession is predicated. Ex.:—

ने:प्ते:प्र्युमा:स्न्र-२ेन्।	That is my thunder.
Or :	
<u> ५, तुमा स्नर रे १ ६ वे १३ ५ । </u>	That thunder is mine.
<b>५</b> ५ हिंद से के मास हैंद से द	This is your dictionary.
Or :—	
केंमा अहें ५ १५ दे मिंदि रहे हैं पर	This dictionary is yours.

(b) In some works it is stated that the Possessive case may also be formed by affixing 35 to the shorter forms of the Personal Pronouns. Thus, 5.35 My, mine, of me; 5.35 His, of him, and so torth. If

this be so, it must be a very obscure Literary usage. If an Ü-pa heard or saw the expression 5.35, it would probably raise in his mind the idea of egoism, selfishness, etc., and not that of the Possessive case as associated with the first person. Compare the phrase 5.57.35, I the chief, i.e., possessed of pride, i.e., proud.

So, also, the expression ANN AND AND AND AND THE Lama's prayer-wheel, probably means The Lama with, or possessed of, the prayer-wheel.

## 2.—REFLEXIVE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

These are merely the Reflexive Pronouns put in the Genitive case. They then signify One's, One's own, My own, Thy own, Thine own, His own, Her own, Its own, Our own, Your own, Their own, according to the pronoun, either expressed or implied, to which, in the same sentence, they respectively refer back.

COLLOQUIAL EXAMPLES :—

ENTE THE TAIL OF THE CALL OF T

ট্রিব্ বিষ্কা or Literary অব ব্যা

बुर-अन्ध्रिर-दम्बिश-णु-रेद।

ਸ਼ੌਂ ਲੈ ਲੈ ਨੇ ਲੈ ਫ਼ਰੂ ਨੇ ਲੈ ਫੇ ਲੈ ਫੇ

I shall ride my own horse.

We shall have to cook our own food.

Will you bring your own servant?

You must all bring your own knives, forks and spoons.

Each of you must bring his own knife, fork and spoon.

He did not realize his own good luck.

They cannot tell their own names.

भै:रे:रेश (or भै:श्रॅंश्श्रं) रटमी हुं र्वेंद्रप्रिंट पेंप्यह्य प्रेंश भेद्र हेश गीः पदुमा

Every man believes his own watch is the most accurate.

मि वस्र उर् राजें दे में दानिया करा विकास कर

They have all cleared out of their own village.

मिट्स्रेरेरे अन्दर्भी मुद्रित्न्वर र्षेत्।

Every house has its own park (compound).

तर्भवशःविदः। यर्भवशःविदः।

My own mother educated me.

In honorific form:—

च्रस्यस्यस्य स्यान्त्रम्यः । ट.स्ट.मी.लीसः भ्री.मोर्चुस्यसः ग्रीसः ट.सेमाः

My own mother, etc.

मिं र दानी प्रशेष प्रदेश मान स्ति । य रेत्।

He was the architect of his own good fortune.

स्रोब:यश्चरम्],प्रेच। स्रोब:यश्चरम्],प्रेच।

Every housewife thinks her own broom is the best.

वैट.। चिर्ट्यानीश्चेट.श्चेश.ग्री.मुब्रमीश.शस्री.सुब्र

He succeeded because of his own diligence.

The following are Literary:-

म्नुः सुक्षात्रा क्षेट्र के ते क्षेत्राय के रहा नी । भुः सुक्षात्रा क्षेट्र के ते क्षेत्राय के रहा नी ।

He himself bearing our sins in his own body upon the tree (1 Peter ii. 24).

र्शःसटाम्यामाश्चायात्र्र्त्यः मुद्दाः य

He who speaks of himself seeks his own glory (John vii. 18).

म्रिट् वे रट मी मिया मिश्र श में वे गुटा। प्रिट. रट. मी. पंचटश द्वेश ग्रीशंश.

He came to his own kingdom, but his own subjects received him not (John i. 11).

वुसस्यः रदः देव वेर के से पर्मा रदः ह्राँमा रदः मीक्षः माउँदः गीः रेद।

**रद्भार्युः सेर् ब**ा

Love seeketh not her own (1 Cor. xiii. 5).

You will take your own life (D).

If one have no son of his own (D).

VI.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

These may also be called Distinguishing Adjectives. The com-

The following are also common:—

25.72.

This very, This same.

ና'ጚር' That very, That same.

ASTMINE This particular.

ζ'η'Ҳς' That particular.

קאָיאָר: That very; that precisely; just so; like that, thus; so; just that.

रमामा

Also the following:—

ধ্র'দ্রী'

That over there, Yonder (far off).

That just there (nearer).

That up there.

That down there.

These latter may be used just as they stand, or they may be put in the genitive case. Whichever method is adopted, they precede the noun that they distinguish, and they may be used with or without 5

Also the following: --

 $\begin{array}{c} 355 \\ 55 \end{array}$ 

EXAMPLES:-

**२१** सुः धेव।

रेखुः ध्वेदा

परे प्रमुद (णुना) भेदा

रे'द्रे श्चेन'यर्ग'भेना

भु:५म:२:४८:मीश:मुॅर:भूर्य:मायट:मी:रेर।

८.ज.ट्रे.बंश.चोबट.बेंच.चं.ट्रे.ट्रे.चं.रट. चोबट.ऱ्योश.चोबट. ।

त्रस्यान्त्रिःस्यान्तिःसःन्त्रान्ताःस्यःविमाः त्रात्रेर्तेन्ति।

यदे यम गमादर्श स्रिर्धर

त्रवाह्य स्वाह्य स्वाह्य

र्नामा इ.वंश. (or भावंश.) धु.लूट्.।

रमार्ट्र

थ'मै। रेदे सिट'यामा रे बेर मी भेर।

Or :--

य'मी' (or य'मीदी') रे'नेदी'श्रीदायामा' रे'बेर'मी'र्थित्। Who is this?

Who is that?

This is my brother, or sister.

That is my master.

That same gentleman will employ you.

Please give me what you can of that: literally, what you can from that, just that please give.

This road goes as far as to that house: literally, this road to that house, about just that, goes.

What is the road like to the pass?

Very steep and crooked, just like that.

That won't do at all: literally, like that will not come at all.

That is so.

What is the name of that hill away yonder?

What is the name, etc.

अभिर्देशकेत्यि देशियमें अप्ति केर्यो केर्यो क्षा केर्यो क

ট্রিন্-ইম্মান্ত্রিন্-র্ম্ব্রান্ত্র্মা

The Literary equivalents for most of the above are: -

٩5٠	This.	<b>५</b> ५.क्सश	These.	
ξ.	That.	रे'इसस	Those.	
<b>दर्ने</b> के		दे <sup>.</sup> के	)	
٩ <b>५</b> ٠३ <b>५</b> ٠		रें केर	 	
۹۶٬۰۳۲	This very; This same.	₹ <b>.</b> ₹Ľ.	That very; That same.	
<b>८</b> र्रे:मिॅंब		रे मिंद		
<b>न</b> रे मिं ब केर		रेमिंग ३५	<u> </u>	
<b>८</b> रीमः		र्ने ग	1	
<b>५</b> ५:मा	This particular.	दे'मा	That partic	ular.
<b>५५ मार्यः</b>		रे'ग्'रूट	j	
कुंम ]		यप	)	Save মন and
శ్ర.భ.		শ্বন্দী	That there.	ধন these are
ম'দ্মী'	This here.	दें के	]	not used in C, or Tsang.
<b>૩</b> ઃજે		র্	That.	3
۹5' <b>۹5'¤</b> )				
5'95'4'	Such, Such as.			
पर्.क्रर				
<u>बुद्धाःचै.च.</u> )				
<b>3.</b> 4.	So named, Nam	red.		

EXAMPLES:-

८.र्ट. श्रुट. (or भक्षेत्र.) ४५.७४१.वेश.वे.च।

श्रम्भायाः स्वाप्तः स्वापतः स्

L.はよ.ばよ.がま!

I and one so named; I and so and so.

They laid hold upon one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country (Luke xxiii. 26).

And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a councillor, a good man and a righteous, of Arimathæa, a city of the Jews (Luke xxiii. 50).

Such as this am I (D).

VII.—THE RECIPROCAL PRONOUN.

নার্বানার্বা | One another; each other.

EXAMPLES:-

ह्यूट. । च्यू. च्युड्य. च्यूड्य. च्यूड्य. च्यूड्य. च्यूड्य.

They loved each other

रेतित.क्रूर.कुर.त्र.चोडुचीश.शूट.। अ.जैश.भै.चोर्च्चश.क्रू.चोटुची.ज.चाटुची.

The ladies looked at one another mirthfully.

व्यः र्वे नारेमामी सः त्यमारेमा स्रेक् धः रेत्।

They have gone up to each other.

मिं हैं नहिमा मिश्रामहिमा मी पुना सिंगा लेखः र्शु र्मु स्थार से र्मु

They have scrutinized each other's garments.

The Lamas received ceremonial scarfs from one another.

मिं कें मिडमान्दरसा अधानु मिडमा खेदायः देन।

They have gone in company with one another.

विं के महिमायामहिमामायश्य प्रतृत्रे

They are conversing with each other.

निर्दे अट महिना मिक्षा निर्मा मिनिर्ध Ye also ought to wash one another's त्मूर'र्नेब्र'णुं'रेर्।

feet (John xiii. 14).

মিন্দ্রী ক্র'নার্মা ক্রি'ব্ল'ব্ম'মি'নাম' Some of his disciples said one to महिमात्ममहिमात्मयः स्ट्रिटः ।

another.

### VIII.—Interrogative Pronouns.

In the Colloquial these are:-

নাই is more commonly used than নাম

All the above are declinable like nouns.

The Literary equivalents are:

In simple questions the Interrogative Pronoun is usually placed immediately before the verb. Ex.:-

हिंद्रश्रधीय।

Who are you? (singular).

हुँ र खं. खं. लुब

Who are you? (plural). पर्ने उ.शुं . भूर्ये ।

ब्राम्म पर्ने . कें शुं शुं . मे ।

रे उ. ब्राम्म शुं शुं पर्ने ॥

हें न जें . में . में

Who is present?

Who are these Lamas?

What Lamas were there?

What is your name?

What is that box made of (by)?

What are these loads?

What horses were there?

Who sent this book?

Which of these books do you want?

If, however, the Interrogative is in the genitive case, it may come either before the verb or before its noun. Ex.:—

यःमी'यिट'यः सुदै'रे र or यःमी'सुदै'

Whose house is that?

When, too, the sentence is more complex, the pronoun, though it precedes, need not immediately precede the verb. Ex.:—

ब्रुनःग्रुःतरुषा। व्यनःग्रुःतरुषा। Which of you can give me a rupee?

र्गो्ब सक्ता नी निया श्री द के दिये माट दट । सुर पर पुरसा

With what is the Kingdom of God to be compared? (Mark iv. 30).

द्योषाःचरःवेशःग्रीःदर्म। हिन्दःक्षः प्रसःश्रसःदःषःश्रमाःसःमङ्गाः Who among you can charge me with any sin?

When the sentence contains an Interrogative Pronoun the Interrogative particle is not usually added to the verb. However, there is no harm in adding it. Ex.:—

विंद्राण्चैशमाने निर्वेशणी वेद्र**्द्रश** 

What are you building?

प्राप्त : श्रुश वर्डेश खेट or खेट दः,

Who is going to build that house?

or ME.EN. or ME.ENI

यमित्राम्बर्ये दे सर्वद्यामारे कुमे र्पेर्। What is that abbot's name?

Here may also be mentioned T. WHAT MEASURE? It is often used as an adverb, signifying How much? but it may also be regarded as an Interrogative Pronoun signifying WHAT? Ex.:—

ढ़ॖॱक़ॕ॔ॸॱ**ॻॱक़ॕ॔**ॸॱॸॆॸ॒।

What o'clock is it? What is the time, or hour? Literally What water-measure is it.

अमीर्द्राक्ष्या विषयाम्यः वद्यविष्या

What sort of sport (wild animals, game) is there in that big valley down there?

ग्रेंडे.) यर जिल्ला मिट्टेश. डी. श्रायंत्राच्यां प्रिशः हैंये. ग्रांडा (or चांडी.

What is the road like from Lhasa to Ta-shī-lhüm-po (Shi-ga-tse)?

The Literary equivalent of 의교토리 is 환경자, or 환경자 or 환경지, or 충경지 or Ex.:—

२.१.५२.चेश.४.जमाश।

What is best to be done now? How best to act now?

शटश.मीश.पुश.चै.च.इ.के.चै.गूर।

What sort of Being is the so-called Buddha?

N.B.—3. is more correct, but E is also used interrogatively.

IX.-RELATIVE AND CORRELATIVE PRONOUNS.

A.—Relative Pronouns.

In the Colloquial there is no pronoun corresponding to our Relative Pronoun Who, the force and effect of which are expressed by turning what we call the relative clause in the sentence into a kind of adjectival or noun phrase. This is done by adding to the root of the verb the affix रूपिन, which, it will be remembered, may take the Article, Definite or Indefinite. Ex.:—

त्रमार्क्ष मार्श्वर स्थानम् दे : स्थानम् स्था

सनाक्ष्यं नार्धर आमन क्षे रे दश अवंद वुट ।

Or :-

सम्द्रिम् स्ट्रिन्स्य स्ट्रिन

ম'নশ্ব'শাদ্ব'ই'র্থাস্ট্রবার্থীর'র্থানে।

बुद्दः । बुद्दः गुःत्वयद्दः सम्बदः चुः दशः स्वेद्दः चुदः । बुद्दः गुःत्वयद्दः सम्बदः चुः स्वः स्वेद्दः चुदः ।

ब्रुट गुप्तसर्साम्य से देवे सुद्धार कर दर्श हैं । नेस गुप्तसर्माम्य से देवे सुद्धार कर दर्श हैं ।

श्वराणु नशर सम्बन्धेर से रेश श्वर णुदे यम् सम्बन्धाः सम्बन्धः से रेश श्वर जुदे

ब्रुट गु नश्रद अमिन मु के दिन सक्ता हु है। ब्रुट गु नश्रद ।

स्.ज.चर्मेचेशःशूटः। मूटःसःवससःबरःश्रेटःगो.चसरःभाषयःश्रुष्टः I have seen the man who kills the sheep.

He has seen the man who kills the sheep.

He who killed the man (i.e., the man-killer, or murderer) has run away.

I have seen the man who killed the wolf, i.e., the wolf-killer, or wolf-killing man.

I know the brother of the man who killed the wolf.

The man who killed the wolf has given me its skin.

I went mith the man who killed the wolf.

All the villagers ran to the man who killed the wolf.

(प) देर। श्रीराम्भावनाः श्रीरास्यामन् स्त्रीः श्रीराम्भावनाः श्रीरामन् स्त्रीः

बिनामिट सम्बन्धि सर्दि ग्री तर्नी।

भै'ने'ल्वश'यन्'न्ट'स्रुग्ग'नु'ॲट'स्रायन्' मुो'न्ट्रेंब्'से दे म्यॉजिंग'र्सेन्।

ल.च.ऱ्.च्रर.ची.पर्चेच.श्राप्तर.ची.श्रुष्ट्र.श्रुष्ट.

विष्यः यदः द्राः अक्षः दुः ॲटः आय्यः मीः द्रितः मिळमा मीश्रामाश्रामानः द्राः अक्षः स्रोतः । विषयः यदः द्राः अक्षः द्रोतः अदः द्रोतः अक्षः स्रोतः ।

বৰ'ম'শ্ল'২'ছ'-বিধানা-পূৰ্বধা। টুই-কুগ্না-মূৰিনা-বৰা-পূচ-প্ৰামধ্নী-প্ৰেষা-

न्यामी,मार्थका,सूचः मीत्यः । के.श.ज.कूर्यः भीत्यः भुः कुची,मी,श्रेः येशः ट.ज. The abbot gave the man who killed the wolf a rupee.

A man who came with the Sha-pé is staying in that house.

That man is the servant of an official who came with the Sha-pé.

What is the name of the man who signed the Treaty?

The attendants who came with the Sha-pé bought many quaint things in Calcutta.

Did you converse with the Amban who came from China?

I have got two two-edged bans (swords) from a man who used to live in Lhasa.

The above are all in the Active Voice, but a difficulty occurs when there is nothing in the context to show whether the Active or the Passive Voice is meant. In the following examples, for instance, either voice may be implied:—

 EN. च श ८. श्रामिश मी. श्री. शे. च श ८. श्री. श्री.

I have seen the man who killed, i.e., the murderer, or killingman; or

man; or
I have seen the man who was
killed.

In such cases the general drift of the conversation is the sole guide what the meaning really is. In fact, the last three examples are

susceptible of a third rendering, namely, The man who was killed by me has been seen; and, if this is not the meaning intended by the speaker, the Personal Pronoun CN should be inserted immediately before the verb. Thus:---

I have seen the man who killed;
or
I have seen the man who was killed.

The difficulty as regards Voice is, however, removable by avoiding the construction in APA for the Passive Voice, and using instead the simple Participle as an adjective either preceding or following its noun. Ex.:---

 $\left\{ egin{array}{lll} I & have & seen & the & man & who & was \\ & & killed \, . \end{array} 
ight.$ 

Or the construction in आन्नज् may be retained and something introduced to indicate by whom or by what the man was killed. Ex.:-

He has seen the man who was killed by the soldier.

I have seen the man who was killed by the soldiers.

The best way of differentiating between the voices in cases of this sort is to make use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb 354 To do. Thus:--

মেরি-ব্রেন্ডা (or দার্মির-) দুখানে I have seen the man who was killed.

নুমনি (or নাইনি) ব্ৰমন্তি I have seen the man who is to be killed.

The Relative Pronouns That and Which may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates. When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Active Voice should be in 875, as above exemplified. Ex.:—

বধर শবিষ্ট্র ট্রি. ই. দেশ সমূদ্র বিদে। ট্রি. বশব শবিষ্ট্র ট্রি. ই. দেশ সমূদ্র বিদে।

I have seen the dog that killed.

नश्चरः श्रामकः देवे सम्मे नर्यवः यः दे । नश्चरः श्रामकः मी मि देवे सम्मे नर्यवः यः दे ।

The head of the dog that killed has been chopped off.

The dog that killed the man has not been caught.

When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Passive Voice is also in 5000, when the Agent is indicated; and in a simple Participle used as an adjective, either preceding or following its noun. when the Agent is not indicated. Ex.:—

ਤੈਟ.। ਭੈਬ.ਖਬਟ.भाष्य.की.७.श.टे.टश.भडेंट. ਭੈਬ.ਖਬਟ.भाष्य.७.श.टे.टश.भडेंट. वैट.। ਭੈਬ.ਖਬਟ.भाष्य.थे.श.टे.टश.भडेंट. वैट.।

I have seen the cat that was killed by the dog.

वसर्यदे वि'से'रे'८स'सर्वेट गुटा वि'से'यसर्यो रे'टस'सर्वेट गुटा।

I have seen the cat that was killed.

This construction may also be used when the agent is indicated. Ex.:—

ਸੁੰਕਾਰਕਤ ਧੰਨੇ 'ਕੇ' ਸੰਤੰ 'ਵਕਾ ਸੰਭੰ 'ਤੂ ' 
$$I$$
 have seen the cat that was killed by the dog.

When Inanimates are concerned the Participial construction should be adopted. This construction, like the one in ठाउँ, is also in itself incapable of differentiating between the Active and the Passive Voice. Thus:—

This is the iron that broke (something); or, This is the iron that was broken.

The following, however, illustrate the Active Voice, as an object is mentioned, and the sense is therefore clear. Ex.:—

र्हे.चडमायते.क्षेमाश्चरे.पर्टे.प्टरी

This is the iron that broke the stone, i.e., the stone-breaking iron.

्रम्बार्यस्मायदे हैं ने ति है है । ्राः — अन्याय देवा यदे स्प्रे हैं । अन्याय देवा यदे स्पर् है । व्याय देवा यदे स्पर् है । (त्र्य in Colloquial) त्रुमा

This is the stone that broke the iron.

(तर्झ' in Colloquial) तर्म। Or:— वमास्त्रत्यस्माधारीत्रीः उत्त्रम्।

Here is the arrow that struck the rock.

The following illustrate the Passive Voice:-

द्रेश-वडना-धित-भुनाश-दे-पिदे-सेद- or द्रेग्दिनेश-भुनाश-वडना-धारे-सेद्रा भुनाश-गुश-वडना-धित-हेन्दिने-सेद- or भुनाश-गुश-दे-पडना-धारे-पदि-सेद-

This is the iron that was broken by the stone.

This is the stone that was broken by the iron.

Here is the rock that was struck by the arrow.

I will give you the book that you read to me.

The Active Participles  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{S}$   $\widetilde{P}_{5}$ , for Animates, and  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{S}$ , for Inanimates, may also be used for the construction of Relative clauses, the former being put in the Genitive case, and the latter also, if it precedes its noun, but in the Nominative case if it follows its noun.

#### EXAMPLES:—

न् दे । ने रे ।

A man who is now in Lhasa will come.

तक्ष्यः द्वीराणीः तर्म। विद्यान्यास्य स्थानः द्वानः स्थानः दे

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

र्मास्मा-विट-दम्भाशः व्याप्तरः याने त्रह्णः वमासमा-विट-दम्भाशः व्याप्तरः याने त्रह्णः

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

In this last case the Pronoun नहें (or नहें), which, may be used thus:—

त.लूर.त.र.पष्ट्र्य.र.सूर्य.ग्री.परेवा। चंचा.सैवा.वा.इ. (or बाट.) श्वट.थवाश.

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

मिर्ने : इंश्रासंबूदः विदःदश । इंश्रासंबद्धः विदःदश ।

Have you seen the Treaty that was signed at Lhasa?

Or :—

पक्षेत्रायाने (मान्तः) क्षास्रायान्यस्यः पक्षेत्रायाने (मान्तः) क्षास्रायान्यस्य

#### B.—Correlative Pronouns.

The English Personal Correlative Pronouns, the rendering of which into Tibetan has now to be considered, are :--

I or WE
THOU or YOU
HE or THEY
WHOSO.
WHOEVER.
WHOSOEVER.

The Impersonal Correlative Pronouns may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates, and are:—

WHAT, OF THAT WHICH.

WHAT SO.

WHATEVER.

WHICHEVER.

WHATSOEVER.

Whichsoever.

ANYTHING THAT.

NOTHING THAT.

#### 1.—Personal Pronouns.

When the Pronoun is in the first or second person, singular or plural, one construction is to use the Pronoun itself, in its ordinary non-relative form (5, 5, 7, 7, 5, etc.), and to turn what we call the Relative part of the sentence into a sort of Noun-phrase, with the aid of the affix  $\sqrt[8]{45}$ . Ex.:—

मुक्ययां भेरा का मुन्यान्तर होते. मुक्ययां भेरा

শ্ব। ই.স্কু.ট্রিই.এু.ধেনংগ্র. (or श्र.शुर.) শ্ব। I who am conversing with you (i.e., I. the converser with you) am your king.

We who salute you (i.e., we your saluters) are your subjects.

चिर्-सु-मुन्य-सम्बर्-रे-त्य-द-र्द्धश्यम् रन्य-सु-स्थ-सम्बर्-रे-त्य-द-र्द्धश्यम्

We submit to thee who hast subdued us, i.e., to thee our subduer.

Sometimes, however, the sentence has to be wholly recast and a participial construction adopted instead. Ex.:—

ট্রির'র্টু'র্র্বার র্র্বার বিশ্বর বিশ্বর

Thou whose son is with us (i.e., thy son being with us, thou) must be our king.

When the Pronoun is in the third person, the construction may be either in SUC WHOEVER, ANYONE WHO, HE WHO, etc., or in SUCK.:—

स्रा, लट स्रा, द्वेद. (or द्वेद. श्रेत्र. (or स्रा, द्वेद.दे. or

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away is (or will be) a coward.

शुः ॲट व (or ॲट व्हा) अट वहा अट ॲम्मामी अने न

Nobody (or no-one) who comes will ever return: or, he who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes will never return.

श्रुदे श्रूमाय मिंद्र गुैश्वायश्वाय (for य ) देद्र।

Whose-soever sins ye remit they are remitted.

श्चें सुर्वेश के दश्या अट. वर्षे वर्छट. ।

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away will be shot.

रे.इ.शु.मार्रेर्।म्बा.स.स. द्व.स.मार्रेर् सर्भे.स्ट. (or सम.स.मार्रेर् सर्भे.स.रेर्।

Anybody who (or he who, or whoever) goes to sleep there will never wake up.

<u>સું</u>ય.<u>ભૂદ. |</u> જ્.તટ્ર.શંશ.તં શેંદશ.ય.ભદ.ભદ.ક્ષૈત્ર.ધ્ય.

Whoever (or anyone who, or he who) drinks this water will be thirsty again.

ૹુઃઍઽ੶ૡ**ઃઌઽ**ઃઌૹ*ઃ*ઌ<u>૽૽૽ૢ૽૽૽ૢ૽ૢ૽૽૽ૢ૽ૼ૱ઌ૽૽ૢ૽ૺ૾ૺ૱ૺૺૺૺૺૢ૽</u>

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes must work.

য়ৢৼ<sup>৽</sup>ঢ়ৢ৽ৼ**ৢ।** য়ৢৼ৽ড়৽৸৽ঢ়ৢয়৽ৼ৸ঢ়৽ঢ়৽৻৻৸৽৽য়৾ঢ়ৢয়৽

Whoever (or he who, or whosoever or anyone who) works will be paid.

शुःभाष्पित्रःयाने त्या श्रेत्रः व क्रायः व स्थाः व स्

Whosoever hath, to him having been given, he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, पर्स्नायर प्रमुद्धन स्ट्रा गुर स्ट्रामायर प्रमुद्धन स्ट्रा from him even that which he hath shall be taken away.

ची.लूट.वे.ट्र.स्ट.चुब्र.लूट.। ची.लूट.वे.ट्र.स्ट.चुब्र.मुझ.(or स्ट. श्रेप्र.स्रुच्यश.ज.धीट.ट्र.चर्मेचाश.वंश.लूट.

Anyone towards whom the bull rushes will naturally run away.

शुं मी रेप मी श्रा हा प्राप्त के अदा दे से स्वर्ध के स्वर्य के स्वर्य के स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स्वर्ध के स्

Anyone with whom that Lama over there quarrels will regret it.

Sometimes both NUC and NAS are used together. Ex.:—

য়ুত্ম'मो' দেই দেটি হ' সাম্ব হ'ম' আমের I will give a rupee to anyone who will carry this letter.

N.B.—It will be noticed that  $\S$  is usually separated from  $\mbox{UC}$  Moreover, it is the  $\S$  and not the  $\mbox{UC}$  which takes whatever casesigns are necessary, and the  $\mbox{UC}$  comes in at the end of the relative clause.

# 2.—Impersonal Pronouns.

In the case of What (in the sense of That which) which is really a Correlative Pronoun, the participial construction is adopted, and the Pronoun निर्दे (or निर्दे) That which may be used or not at pleasure. Ex.:—

वित्रिः रेश्वामार्थः (or मारः) त्रिमाः यादियः वित्रः देवः (दमाः) द्रमां मीः रेदः द्रमाः द्रमाः मीः मीः वित्रः रेशः त्रमाः माः मीः मीः वित्रः रेशः स्त्रामाः यादियः रेशः देशः द्रमाः द्रमाः माः मीः मीः वित्रः रेशः द्रमाः माः मीः मीः वित्रः रेशः द्रमाः माः मीः मीः वित्रः रेशः द्रमाः माः मीः मीः वित्रः यो मीः यादियः रेशः वित्रः यो मीः यादियः यो मीः यो मी

Do you understand what you are reading?

[화] [취소대 (미국: or 미디) 다시스다. You must do what I tell you. दे:मिंदःसेशः वेदःदर्भेशः गुःसेद।

हिंदा (मारे or मार) द्वीशयादे I will buy what you want. [ X 3 X WE. ]

रेदः (नारे or नाट) धेरियारेट्स र I do not know exactly what they cost. बसा-विसागी सेर।

র্নির্দ্ধ (পাই or পার) ব্রির্দ্ধিনীর I will give him what you like. य दे दशक्ति व खेर खेर ।

The other Impersonal Correlative Pronouns, which are more forcible than नारे and नार What, That which, namely, नारे आद, TICUL' and TICTIC WHAT SO, WHATEVER, WHATSOEVER, ANY-THING THAT, and, with a negative, Nothing that, may be illustrated thus\_:—

*ॲ*ॱरेशनारे ग्रे**र**क्षप्रप्रमार्थे ५५ना। श्रॅंदेशमारे वुद्धारे प्यापनार्थे त्रुन। **ॲ**ॱरेशन्दानुदयादेखार्ध्यम् रॅंग्स्ट्ना श्रें रे मार मार केर सरे अर अमिर्स **५५म।** 

Whatever, or anything that, she does is good.

हिंद्र रेते विराधि प्रते बराया मारे सिंद्र यादेते रेबॱमॅ[ट'Wट'मॅिंब'य.प**्र**प्युय'गुॅं'रे**र्।** श्रेदे क्षेट मी बट यामा ने स्प्रिंग या देश स्प्र

Whatsoever is in a man's heart will influence his whole life.

He can tell the price of anything that, or whatever, is in your

प्रित् श्रुवाः क्रटः सन्वदः चुेदः स्प्रेटः ।

house.

Or :-

मृष्टुं श्रुंचा सिट विषयसैया लूट । भूष्टुं श्रुंचा सिट जानिट निट लूट या ट्रेश

होर-ची-लुब । होर-ची-लुब ।

Or :—

พ.ศิร.ภูัย. 1 ยนู. ชุนย. พ. ปะ. ช ในไ. ก. กะ. ยมู้ย์.

Or:--

हेर सिंदः। इंस्पेंदः।

수기원: 비스 크로 4.ME, 토스 웨더워 크로 왕.

Or:--

 न्यूश्या
 चेत्राय
 चेत्राय

Whatsoever is in a man's heart will influence his whole life.

I will give you anything that, or whatever, is in my power.

Nothing that the enemy does will save the fortress.

मूर्ट्र रहा माट त्यय या दे त्या स्था द मीमा मी स

You are right in absolutely nothing that you have said.

८श.मिट.चुंश.त.ट्रे.बेश.जूचा.ची.शरे।

I recede from nothing that I have written.

হেম'না'নাম'মার্থিত' ম'র্থিত' (or ম'র্ডিত্ত') I have not seen anything.

## 3.—Literary Constructions.

(a) The following examples illustrate the Literary method of rendering relative clauses:—

चेर. ह्यूट. पचर. चकर. बक्ष. श्रे. था. श्रेमी. तर. वश्रश. कर. चकर. बक्ष. श्रे. था. श्रेमी. तर. चेर. ह्यूट. पचर्था. चे. चचट. ग्रु. श्रे. श्रे.

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire (Matt. vii. 19).

लूर्यंत्रेश. रट.ची. श्रेंथ.ची.श्रेची. पा.लूर्. चंत्र. श्रेंर.भ.७ची.शर्येट.लट.। रट.ची.श्रेची.पा. चिर्ये.ची.श्रेंथ.ची.श्रेची.पा.च्यं.ची.श्रेची.पा.

र्र्। ८.४८.बर.मी.शट.र्<u>र</u>ूर.मी.र.त.लुर। १४म.पञ्.त. ४४४.मी.श. र्यीमा. पर्या.

देनश्व हेन्। देनश्व श्रक्ता नी भेर सदे नी भेर सहेन देन श्रक्ता नी भेर सदे नी नी भेर सहेन प्रमान सहेना

भर हिर गुँश राया मन्दावि मिने वहैर रेकेरेर्मायाभर हेरारी

द्यः ध्यः गुरा दायः म्यादायदे सर्हेर् । देवसादसासाद्युदायरायदे सर्हेर् वृत्यः

ଜ୍ୟ:ଝ୍ୟର:ନ୍ତିୟ:୯:ଜ:୧୯:୧୯:ମୁର୍-୨ୁ । ଅଷ:ଝ୍ୟର:ନ୍ତି: ଅହ୍ୟ: ପଞ୍ଜି: ସହ:ସହ:

मोर्शेर्'यर चु चते व सुन।

मार्थेर-विदे चासुना।

त्रुष:श्री । चाद : प्रेचि : द्रोदे : द्रोद : द्रा स्ट्रा स्ट्रा लेख: द्रोस:श्री : ४४ : चक्किमोश: ४४ : म्रिट्: ग्रीश: And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? (Matt. vii. 3).

The stone that the builders rejected the same was made the head of the corner (Matt. xxi. 42)

Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's and unto God the things that are God's (Matt. xxii. 21).

And the glory which thou hast given me I have given also unto them (John xvii. 22).

The cup which my father hath given me, shall I not drink it? (John xviii. 11).

The works that I do in my father's name, they testify of me (John x. 25).

A man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed (Luke v. 18).

The calf that is to be killed.

And Philip ran to him and said, understandest thou what thou readest? (Acts viii. 30). (b) The Literary Correlative Pronouns are:-

माट आ Whoever, Whosoever, Anyone who, He who, etc.

E or in certain cases 3

피드.

चाट.बुचा.

चाट.शु.

चार-३५

नाद:दमाःकेदः

שוביאור.

g.ML.

₹**.**4Ľ.

WHATEVER, WHATSOEVER, WHICHEVER, ANYTHING THAT, THAT WHICH, WHAT, etc.

The following examples will serve to illustrate the Literary rendering of the Correlative:—

सुसः दः उमाः भः नृमः भ्रः नेृदः दः नृसः देनः ग्रीः सुमार्थः नेृदः नृ He that is not against us is for us (Mark ix. 40).

रे.पहेब.मु.मूट.। तप्.भू. धभश. २८. ४भ. भोषप्.चे.मु.मूर. ट.ज.चाड्र.च्.जचाश.चाड्र.च्.जचाश.खेश.खेश.

Not everyone that saith unto me Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven (Matt. vii. 21).

कृषः तु. वृचाःभः चैटः । पूषः ग्रीटः षभः बन्नः पिन्नः चाङ्ग्यः भाष्यः लू. २. वर्षः पन्नः चैरःभुरः देशनाः ज्ञान्नः त्यः वर्षः वरः पन्नः चैरःभुरः देशनाः ज्ञान्तः वरः चिन्तः

Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist; yet he that is but little in the मिट्ट मिल होट. टे.केट च.लुब.च.ट्र.लू.

kingdom of heaven is greater than John (Matt. v. 11).

हिर्गीशक्षासाद्यायामास्या

Resist not him that is evil (Matt. v. 38).

मोड्रेन्यर प्रमुद्ध स्थयः ग्रीः लयः क्रेःपदः देः मिल्रेनः पुः मिन्नः क्रेंस्य सः ग्रीः लयः क्रेःपदः मोड्रेन्यर प्रमुद्धः देश्यः लयः क्रेंस्य स्थाः

With what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged (Matt. vii. 2).

स्टिन्। स्याम्ब्रुयाद। देन्द्रान्याक्र्यामुक्रिया स्टिन्।

And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him twain (Matt. v. 41).

ब्रॅर'णुं पर तर्रेर'य'हेर'वेग। व्रिंर'दश व्रॅर'णुं पर तर्रेर'य'हेर'वेग। व्रिंर'दश Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away (Matt. v. 42).

यहै.यर.पंचीर। पथ्च। श्रे.जा.ह्.टे.पंजूच.यर्देज.वीर. श्रे.का.च्यूप.च.ट्रेश.वीर.

And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces, but on whomsoever it shall fall it will scatter him as dust (Matt. xxi. 44).

मी.सूंची.चर्चची.ता.ट्रेशःसुंच.तर.पचींर.स्री ट्रेश.चर्चची.तर.पचींर । श्रेश.गीट.रट. श्रेश. गीट. रट. मी.सूंची.सुंच. तर. चर्झ्य.त.

Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it (Luke xvii. 33).

कु.टे.जश.प बैट.व.वश.लट.शु.सूंश.है। धर.पविर। शैश.पोट.टश.हेर.चट्ट. श्व. पोट. के.पटे. जश.प बैट.व.लट.सूंश. Everyone that drinketh of this water shall thirst again, but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst (John iv. 13).

हेर्यस नेंद्र यादेशसम उद्यास नेंद्र स भेद्र नाट्य दस नुष्टा के स दस भेद सेंद्र दस नेंद्र यादेशसम उद्यास नेंद्र स

मिंद्र मीक्षः मादः अर्थेदः यः ५८ र्थेकः यः २ त्यः ५यदः ये अर्ध् ।

पश्चेत्र'वग्नुर'वेत्र'व्यंश्चेत्र'यश । विंद्र' अस्रश्चेत्र' वग्नुर'वेत्र'यः केत्र'ग्नुः प्रद्यः अस्रशःकेत्र'त्राच्यः वेत्र' स्राप्तः दस्रशःग्नुशः प्राप्तः स्रवेत्। वे. श्चेन्। स्राप्तः व्यव्याः ग्नुशः

३८.यश.भ्रेश.त.यु.च.त्रामश.३८.गूय.यू.। चाट.च.यश.भ्रेश.त.यु.च.गूय। चाट.वीचाश.

स्रोट स्राम्यक्त सामित्र के सामि

सुदे स्थिनाया हि**रः** इसशा ग्रीसः श्रेषा व रे रमा

स्यः व्याप्येदः यःदेः व्यः नाष्टः हेः क्ष्मनाः यः व्यदः यदः विमुद्दाः विष्णुदः हेः क्षमाः यः व्यदः स्यः व्यव्यक्षाः यः व्यदः हेः क्षमाः यः व्यदः

शुश्रा गुरा राविंग्रिने प्राप्ति । देवे विश्वसामिंदि स्थान्त्रुश्चा यासी ह्यारा ।

प्रमुट्टी शु. भूष. मिट.टु. फा. कर्ट. घा. प्रसूची. सर. मिट. क्षेत्रश्च. शुष्तश्च. पर्यिची.टी. चळ्ची.श्चीयश्च. He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth he speaketh (John iii. 31).

What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness (John iii. 32).

God is spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and in truth (John iv. 24).

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of spirit is spirit (John iii. 6).

Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am the Christ (John iv. 26).

Whosesoever's sins ye remit they are remitted (John xx. 23).

Unto everyone that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away (Matt. xxv. 29).

He that rejecteth me and receiveth not my sayings hath one that judgeth him (John xii. 48).

But he that troubleth you shall bear his juagment, whosoever he be (Gal. v. 10). त्रुर्यार् के. यर्द स्याप्त मी. यामाश. य.

८.वर्टाश्रीवर.रेट्र.चर्वरातालव.र्रे।

र्ट्स यें श्रम्भ उर् वर्गर मायक के र्गेक सर्वेग अम्बर्भ सें।

याट भ्रेंचा अप्तर्थ स्था स्थित स्था मिट स्था मि

हे. संदेशना हे. प्यत्यस्य हे. हे. हे. प्रेंट ना हे. संदेशना हे. प्रेंट ना हे. संदेशना है. संदेशना है.

But he hath seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is his teaching who sent me (John vii. 16).

He who built all things is God (Heb. iii. 4).

That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld and our hands handled..declare we unto you (I John i. 1).

Whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honourable, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue and any praise, think on these things (Phil. iv. 8).

## X.—Indefinite Pronouns or Pronominal Adjectives.

1. In the Colloquial the following are the most common:—

মূনি Some one; a certain (person).

বাদ নিবা Something; a certain (thing).

षा रे खेद्र द

मारे प्रवेद दापट (or प्रवेद दश) } Something.

मा.इ.ब्रिमा.

Nobody, None.

```
되다'어디 Any.
मारे.लट.
           Anything; or, with a negative, Nothing, None;
                 Whatever, Whichever.
피도'되다.
चा.चाश.
चार.चा. or चार.
취디면 or 취디 | All, Whole, Entire, Every, Complete, Full.
বধার্থা-ওই
ダニヤ.
विष्याद केंद्र Several.
মেন্থ্য Most.
मविषःतःबुचाः
5'35'
मार्डेश'गा Both.
मारेमा नारेमा One another, Each other.
A.AN. Some.
র্নার্ড A few, Few, A little, Little.
দাউদার্থী Sole, Only, Mere.
```

Same; but 5'KC' That same.

ম্'শ্রিণ্'শ্র' Various, Sundry, Divers.

ጓ፫ Self, One's self.

স্ট্রাত্তে Even one, Either. With a negative, None, Neither. 95.45. Such.

### EXAMPLES:-

र्शक्षेत्र (or र्शन्ते क्षेत्र मि के ) या ह्य थ. ७१ के अ. श. श. श. श्राच

Once upon a time a certain Lama came from Lhasa.

मुःसःदेःरटःमूटःमाशेवःविमाःयःसुद्रःश्रॅटः।

That same Lama went to a certain village.

द्वे अस्र । विवादि विवादि देन । I think he went to get something. मुब्रं श्रूटा

प्र.शट.प्रेशश.पट.ज.श्व.लट.तुब.श.<u>श</u>्ट.।

No one went to Court yesterday.

शु'ग'अदः देव खेर के केंद्र

No favour will be accorded to anybody.

यशमाप्तरे सुप्यट क्षेत्र **मृ**य मुँ रेत्।

Anybody can do this work.

भ्र.पट्रश.च.इ.वे**र**.त.ट्र.चश्चर.ज.पचेंद. मुःदरमा

Anything that this man does turns into gold.

म्रिश. देन्। पर्यं चारा दा दे देश . लट. क्र. ची. सःरेर।

Nothing that he begins is ever finished.

रुमना र्यूट सिट । मिट्रे क्ट क्रा क्रे मिठेना । リア、およ、対し、

Out of the whole army not one man (nobody) was saved.

र्दि हिश भ हु प्रमा उर मर्जेन्य रॉर Soon afterwards the entire herd of cattle vanished.

रे देट मुँदिया क्ष युष्ठा द्या ध्या दें मा दें प्या स्थित Have you any good oranges to-day?

प्रमाण दे प्राप्त प्रमाद केंद्र द्रोहिश मी. Several coolies will be needed for the work.

র্বি ন্ট্রা ব্রা ব্রা না একা নাক্ষা মান্ত এ Some Tibetan officials are staying at Gum (Ghoom).

নাপ্র্যা (or অর্থা) রমধাত্ত স্থা All the others have returned to Lhasa.

रेते. ब्रा मिल्ब मि व्या हे हे ब्री पा Some of the others are staying in Darjeeling.

र्भार-विदार (or विश्वितः) र्गार Kindly give me another cup of tea.

মান্ত্রামান্

新元.1 数元.1 数元.1 数元.1

Or:-

शुर्हा शुर्श वि. श. ज. चि. चर्चेचीश. रु.रु. सीज

Each man presented a complimentary scarf to the lama.

इस्रेस्थ्र ब्रेंब्स्सेर्डेस्वा

Give each horse a pail of water.

होब्रह्मः। श्रु-रेशःस्रिमःकुब्रह्मःमश्रिमःमश्रिमःपिष्टेरः Each man carried three big boxes.

८१:युःमुःमार्द्धशःगादिःखःयःभेद।

This is the father of both the boys.

दश.चश्रद्ध. । र. चिश्र्य. पोश.र्ट्स. ज. घ्र. घर्टे. चचित्रश. Both of us shot the bear.

युःस्राःसहस्राःद्वाःमानुस्रामानुन्नसःस्राह्यः।

Both the pretty girls have come.

**८५.२८.५.म%श.म.५.श.मी.५८।** 

Both this and that will be suitable.

क्रॅमा ५२ मार्केश ग्री देव दमामहिमा स रेट. इस्

Do these two words mean the same?

यम्बर्ग देन्त्रहेशःगदिःद्वःदमःमङिमःदः ध्रेदःयःदिन्न।

Yes, both their meanings appear to be the same.

केंमा प्रदेश ज्ञा प्रमाप्त देश ज्ञा प्रमाप्त । मार्डमा था से**र प्रमा** 

Is the meaning of this word exactly the same as the meaning of that word?

यन्। देनिकेशःगदिः देवः दमाः क्दः मक्ति। यन्।

No, both their meanings are not absolutely the same.

म्बार प्रमुख देना र प्रमुख गी र प्रमुख गी

I want a few grapes.

मृत् त्रुक्ष दे कि दि दि देश देश हिमार्ड दि था I want a few of those grapes.

८.ज.रेटीज.ट्र्स. ह्या.ची.लूट. ।

A very little money will do for me.

मिश्यात्र्रेत् पह्मसी मिट पर्णा सरसा मिश्यार्थ्ये प्रह्मसी मिट पर्णा सरसा मिश्यार्थ्ये प्रह्मसी स्था At sundry (various, or divers) times many Buddhas have appeared in this world of ours.

दे र्के दे द्रीयाया ह्रासादे महिमारी से रेद्रा

The lama was the only man among them.

क्रमायामारे र्वेषायाज्ञमी त्रुम्। क्रेंयुम्

Why be angry? She is a mere child?

র্ব্বীনান্ত্র নার্ত্ত নার্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত নার্ত্ত নার্ত নার নার্ত নার নার্ত নার্ত নার্ত নার নার্ত নার নার্ত নার্ত নার নার্ত নার্ত নার

त्रैमिकेश गुैं बद ब्रामिकेमा अद त्रिंग के Neither of these two will suit.

भे भूट स्ना अट में दे निट निश्च निष्य (Of the entire thousand men not even one escaped

Examples of Kr. Self, One's self, will be found at § 31, iii, iv.

Examples of ਸਤਿਸ਼ਾਸਤਿਸ਼ਾ One another, Each other, will be found at § 31, vii.

ম্ব্ৰেম্ব্ৰেম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰেম্ব্ৰেম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰেম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্ব্ৰিম্বাল

2. The following are the Literary equivalents of the above:—
মাইনাইনা Someone, Somebody, A certain (person).

উল্লেখ্য Something, A certain (thing.)

मानशः ]	
दमदःकेषः	
दम्बद्धः (बेम्	
दमादण्यहः	Some, Several, A good many, A good deal.
ณฑ.	
प्राप्ता ह्विमाः	
शुःलेमाः	Anyone, Anybody, Whoever; or, with negative, No one, Nobody.
चोट.(बेच).	
श्रु.लट.	Everyone, Either, Each; or, with negative, No one, Neither.
네다.MC. )	
इ.लंट.	Anything, Whatever, Everything, Either, Each; or
रु:्बेम <sub>ा</sub> }	with negative, Nothing, None, Neither.
वश्रश.कर्	
गुनः }	All, The whole, Every, Entire, Complete, All.
क्ट.श.	
त्यतः विमा	Mere, Sole, Only.
म्बिद.	Other.
म्बिदः विमाः	Another.
चारुचा:मारुचा:	Each other, One another.
₹. )	
₹:₹·	Each, Every.
श्रांश	
श्र.चाठवा.रा.	Various, Sundry, Divers.
শ্বর্	

भट. <u>त्.</u> ग्रेथ.जश.झेचा.)	Most.
चाकुरु। गाः	Both.
ỗ <b>Ľ.</b> ፫.	Few, Little.
कृता. यमाय.क्ष्म. यमाय. कृत:हे.बुमा.	$A\ few$ , $A\ little$ .
य <b>र</b> मा' वैर्- रूट'	Self, One's self.
কুন্' নাত্তবা'ম' }	Same.
रे:मिंक' रे'ण' रे'रूट' रे'ण'रूट' पर्रे'रूट'	The very same.
<b>५५.५५.</b> ) रे.क्.व. )	Such.
নৰ.প্ৰুৰ.	Either, Each of two. Ex.:—

म्रास्यम्मीत्रम्यस्य द्वार्

On each side of the two shores of (lake) Mapham (Jäschke).

ধ্ব ব্ৰুব্ৰ প্ৰত্ন Either, Both. Ex.:—

ध्रान्त्र द्वित्र प्राप्त क्वा प्राप्त क्वा And on either side (i.e. both sides) of the river (Jāschke).

# § 32. Adverbs.

These are both primitive and derivative. Of Derivatives, some are formed from Pronouns, others from Nouns, and others from Adjectives or Participles. There are also Adverbs of Time, Place, and Manner, Interrogative, Negative, and (added to verbal roots) Relative adverbs.

Those derived from adjectives are formed either by putting the adjective in the terminative case, or by adding to the adjective the expression 55.5%. It is a common habit, however, in the Colloquial to use an adjective adverbially without changing its form.

Adverbs are always placed somewhere before the verb. Interrogative adverbs come immediately before the verb. Others may be inserted at any convenient place in the sentence, so long as the rule is observed that they precede the verb.

The following are some of the commonest adverbs and adverbial phrases used in the Colloquial:—

ADVERBS OF TIME.

When?

(Added to verbal infinitive) When, At the time of..ing.

제5시 Whenever.

(Added to verbal root) When, used relatively; While.

Now (at this time); 5면드 Just now, At

7.75. Hitherto, Up to now. 7.75. Then (at that time).

present.

23

<b>दे</b> 'बुक्ष'	Then (after that).
<b>气.4</b> શ.क्रुमा.क <b>र</b> .	Hereafter, Henceforth.
बुद्धा-स्पटः	Ever, Always. With negative, Never.
ইন্মান্য নুধ্য ইন্মান্য নুধ্য ইন্মান্ত্ৰীয়	Ever, Always, Constantly, Incessantly, etc.
<b>इ.च.</b> इ.च.	When, Just when, About, At the time.
5.2c.mc. २.2c. २.4 <u>)</u>	Moreover, Furthermore.
ब्रुट.	(Added to root of verb) Ever, with negative Never.
うえいまた。 うたなに。 )	Now-a-days.
ट्र.पंचांप. প্रक्षश्चात्रास्त्रभन्न. )	Now and then, Often, Sometimes, Occasionally, with negative, Seldom.
ਅ <b>੮</b> :ਐੱਟ.	Again, Afresh, Anew.
द्धरःमदिनाः होदशःमदिनाः	Once.
<b>अध्यक्ष</b> ट.	At once, Immediately, Hurriedly, Hastily, Directly.
५'२५ॅ'ळॅर'मठिमा ५'५८'ळॅर'मठिमा	Once more.
श.चेश. श्र.चेश.	(With negative) Not at all, Never, In no case.

```
ब्रॅब्स्य
          A short time ago
                                 Formerly, Previously,
মুহ A long time ago
भगुमिशासूर. or भगुमिशासु.
                                      Quickly, Soon, Presently, Directly,
In a little while, In a few
minutes.
F. D. Or F. D.
र्ब:5मा
हैय:र्स्सम्बर्धेनाः
             After, Subsequently, Afterwards, Next, Last, In future,
At last, At length.
र पादश Already.
5沼子 (Vulg.)
四、对下 Lately, Recently.
र्थः दें। Late.
শুর্ম Early.
त्रोंर रें अ नेर पर Without delay.
            Slowly, Gradually, Gently, Softly.
মন্দ্রমান্দ্রমান Last night, Last evening.
```

Eventually, Later on, Indirectly.

Aল্লা (Added to verbal root) Just, Just about, On the point of, Going to.

5元 Some time ago.

5'A', or AF'A', or A'AF' This year.

ন্ত্ৰিই Year before last.

র্ট্র নি ব্যাহার মান্ত্রের মান্ত্রে

작경학 급충다 } Last year. 잘'অ'

ATT. Yearly, Annually.

के सन्माय रेप्ति Daily.

মান ক্রিব To-morrow.

रेंदेंद To-day.

P'NC Yesterday.

ल्मा अरें रें Every day.

भैं अ Some day.

### Adverss of Place

지경 Where? Whither? (Also relatively.)

সাম Wherever, Anywhere.

Note.—In Lhassa  $\Im \Im \Im$  Dir, Here, Hither, is loosely pronounced as if it were spelt  $\Im \Im \Im$  Dir, i.e. something like the English word They, as pronounced by a Eurasian, with a slight dental d sound to the Th. Hence one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of Here, Hither, spelt  $\Im \Im \Im$ , which is not quite a correct form of the loose Lhassa pronunciation. Similarly one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of  $\Im \Im$  There spelt  $\Im \Im$ .

Both 355 and 55 are incorrect. For the former the student should always use 355, or 355, when writing; and, if he chooses to affect the Lhassa pronunciation when speaking, he should say 355, not 355. For 55 he should always write 55, or 551

धने Over there, Yonder.

W'मी Up there.

ম'ন্ Down there.

অম Upwards.

মৃত্য Downwards.

ਜੁੱਕ: \{\bar{\pi} \sqrt{\text{T}} \} \bar{Uphill.}

মুম্ Downhill.

अम्। अन्य प्रमायाः । U pside down.

तर्ने क्या Hence.

देखा Thence.

झर्द्रायः Before.

মূর্মে )
Ahead, In front, Onwards, Forwards.

ਸੰਭ੍ਰਿਧਾਨਾ  $\left. \begin{array}{c} Behind. \end{array} \right.$ 

श्रमाद्भार Afar.

মির্দামে Opposite, Over against.

ಕ್ಷರಾಣ Instead of.

FN Just by, Close by.

বৃহা' Off.

র্বাব স্থ্রীবাধানে Backwards.

প্রস্থাম Outside, Without.

বৃদ্ধে Within, Inside, At home.

বৃদ্ধা From within, From home.

মুন্দ্রীন্থ From without.

মার্থির মে' To the left.

```
নাম্মাম To the right.
```

अभुद्धाः Rigether, Jointly.

ন্ম'ন্ম Everywhere.

ম্ম্মের Around, Round about, All round.

ন্ত্র ভারতি Elsewhere.

ਰੂਝ ਨੂੰ Aside.

ম'র্মান Asunder, Apart.

### Adverbs of Manner.

or auxiliary verb) Probably, Likely, Perhaps.

리(건호, ) 네(건강, )

35.35 (pronounced DIN-DA)

पर्ने बदः चिवे

डेस.

ब्रेश.

चेश.

र'मा'∄र'

5'নাই্ড' Quite so, Just so, Precisely, Exactly.

ইম'ন্বিস্ By degrees, Gradually.

巧兮 (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, Thoroughly.

रेने नेन पुरावस Consequently.

দাউদা হাঁ Simply, Merely, Only, Solely.

ኣር' Simply, Merely, Just, Only.

रे अंशपुराष्ट्रश Alternately.

5'মম' Almost, Nearly.

মঙ্গমান্ত্রীম } Together, Jointly, Unitedly.

দিন্দ্ৰান্থ Separately, Individually.

ই ই বুমাৰ্ম Severally.

रेंदे नुष्ठ वृष्ठ Singly.

युम्रार्शेयाद्यान्त्र Formally.

প্রা Merely, Only, Solely, Entirely.

ম.প্রা

**३.**.4≰ा.

অন্ত্রি or অন্ত্র Well, with negative, Ill, Badly.

ध्यमानाः Better.

भना विश Best.

অন Even, Likewise.

ব্ৰ'হ্য'বৃষ্ণ'ৰ্ষ' Fairly, Honestly.

ত্ত'ন্'বৃষ্ণ' Carefully.

हैन हैन दुरा नुरा Definitely, Punctually, Steadily

ন্রমধার্মান্ত্র Justly, Legally.

हैन स्व } Certainly.

四天对 Orally.

KC Personally, Precisely, Exactly.

দাম্ম নামুম বৃষ্ণ Privately.

ন্দ্ৰ স্বাধ্য বৃষ্ণ বৃষ্ণ বৃষ্ণ । Really, Sincerely, Surely.

ट्रा.चेश.वश.

মর্নুদাম মৃত্যু বৃষ্ণ Promptly.

सार्युमायानुसावरा Punctually.

57775 Especially, Particularly.

59'55.

Ordinarily, Usually, Generally, Universally, Chiefly, Principally.

প্রশার্ক্তরণ Decidedly, Exceedingly.

মু'ব্ল'হা' Clearly, Distinctly, Lucidly, Intelligibly.

বৃষ্ণান্ত্ৰৰ As a rule, Usually.

리독'리독' Indirectly.

मुंच सेन्यः Aback.

মূঁ নেত্ৰ সূত্ৰ Diligently, Zealously, Earnestly, Heartily, Genuinely.

८२ दिस्मञ्जातुः Herewith.

এহামুন্তি Easily.

নামানামা Gradually, Gently, Slowly, Softly.

5. (Between a duplicated adjective or adverb, with 5. at end of sentence) Of course.

Adverbs of Quantity and Comparison.

শ্রহ How much? How many?

শ্বমান্ত্রই Chiefly, Generally.

שב Even, Likewise.

75.5 (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, For the most part, Mostly.

ন্দান ক্রিব Almost, Nearly. With negative, Scarcely.

র্বহা', or in Coll. র্ব' About, Approximately.

왕다'다' } More.

মেম্প্র Most.

रुट्रं विश Least.

5'উচি' Too; or add মানি' to any root; or add ব্ৰাধা as a verb to any root.

५ जिन्दार Scarcely.

 $\left\{ \mathcal{L}_{nondy}^{\text{Lin}}, \mathcal{L}_{nondy}^{\text{Lin}} \right\}$ 

পৃষ্ণ Only, Entirely, All.

র্নি তিন্দি Partly.

지도'진'
| Much. With 독다 added, and followed by a negative,
| Not much.

मिम्दर्भाक्षदः याः Many.

म्प्रिंस'शुः } Very many.

NE NE Too much, Too many.

₹5. Few.

35. Little.

র্নার A little, A few, Some.

MĽ.

**5**:35:

Besides, More yet.

**5.25.ME.** 

35. No little.

Interrogative Adverbs.

मारे देवा

मामो देव दमा

피다.건.

Why?

र्देब-माट-त्य

શું.ખ.

₹.

मातर्श.

इ.जॅर. or श्रु.केर.

चाट.पर्ट.

मा-र्इशः

*مُود*اً.

When?

मारा.

피.2.

Where? Whither?

मान

না.ধথা.

चाट.वश.

Whence?

How?

ন'রুহ' } How much ? How many ?

Adverbs of Affirmation, Doubt and Negation.

মনাথ. भ.जचारा. মদাধার্থী M.ME. Yes. שעלבי এনাহা-ই-মদাহা আঁহ অনাধ্য-মূৰ No. এদাধামীর Rather (i.e. Than...) pleases. Perhaps, Probably. At all events, In any case. Without doubt, Unhesitatingly. <u>क्र.जश</u>

Rather, For the most part, Somewhat, Almost, Nearly, with negative, Scarcely.

At all, Ever. (With negative) Not at all, Never.

As regards the Adverbs and Adverbial phrases used in the Literary language, it is hardly worth while giving a list of them, as the student can easily find them for himself in Jäschke's or Rai Sarat Chandra Das's Dictionary, or in Csoma de Körös's Grammar, where he will see how and to what extent they differ from the Colloquial expressions.

EXAMPLES of the use of Adverbs and Adverbial expressions in the Colloquial:--

```
प्रकेष में के मा प्रेस मुद्देश (or When did the Pāṇ-ch'en-rin-po-ch'e (or Ṭa-shī Lama) come from मिल्मा हैं) देश मा पुरा के मिल्मा मिल
```

हिर गुरुपार मार्थ **स्वाय का अटा अवदा**सा (or समाराः) जूरशः (or जुबे)।

Whenever you can, get married.

हिंद्रमाधार्स्ट्रिंद्राणुः स्पर्

म् यम्य पत्र्रीमि पर्मा

मिनान्याभिरामीत्न्न।

हिर्गे, लेश मी.से. चित्रमात्र संस्तरी

इरदेवे देव मार्कें दरदे ।

<u>५.७.क.बूर्यूरमाबूर</u>

विंदः देशः विदः यः यः मीः वर्डेशः दशः देवः दमाः मारे रेरा

लॅरपरे उमारे रेंबप्य थेंदर मारे र्

पिट.त.वज्ञ. रेश.ठ ग्रीय.शूट. ।

श्रॅर्ज्यम्मिनेश्रॅट।

मिट याया सुब रसा ब मिरा दर्गीट से दे मा 너비. 디크의 . 셋다.

अभी भिर् र र मि द्रमुक्ष र र

मिंग्विनाशक्षाकुर्द्धिनार्द्धिन्।

हिर्क्षाश्वास द्वेष सुदारमा

মেনার। েম্বারামে (ব্যামানা) ব্রিবারা No, I have never been to Lhasa. ᢅᢓᠯᠺ (pron. nyúna.)

मिंद देर वस अट येव ॲट ट्रिस

Where are you living?

Whither is the monk going?

Whence comes he?

How is your mother's health?

What is the price of that horse?

What o'clock is it now?

What have you built yonder house

Why have you come here?

While the house was being built, it collapsed.

He died about dusk.

When he went home he ate his dinner.

When he was eating, he fell.

How long (how many hours) is it since he died? i.e. was alive.

Have you ever been to Lhasa?

Will you ever go there?

है आ हैन दिन् शास्त्र में मि भेदा दा त्र Some day I may go to Lhasa.

ryúng.)

I have never even been to Chūmbi.

মিমেটেটির বিশ্ব ব্যা (or মাব্যা) Many people have never been to the hills at all.

रे र्ड प्रमार्रेट प्रमार्केन प्रमा केन प्रमा किन्ति The hills are very far away.

क्ष'रु'रु'रु'रुप्प्रम्'रेट'र्ये'था (or श्रम्'रेट Lhasa is too far away. श्रमार्केर्) ५२म।

५.३८.ई.४.२.२८.चीर.वंचा.कूरे.४२ची Moreover, Lhasa is too cold.

रेप्रम्थ उर् मेर्। र्'द्वामार्टी भेर्। That is not all. There is much more yet.

भ्रां आ त्रों या त्रा हैं हे न्नि प्राप्त हिंदी I would rather stay in Darjeeling than go to Lhasa.

र्दर मिर्डिमा पर्दे दे र समा र्दाप्त कें सुरक्षात्य Our troops once went to Lhasa.

८ मु मु प्राप्त प्रमुद्ध करा में निर्मा किया प्रश्ति प्रति प्रत

विद्यमार्भे मार्के र दे ।

How old is that tree?

मिंद्र'मिर्केद 'भेद। How old are you?

र्ग.क.रे.एश.श्रुम्बारा (or नप्रीचारा,) वरा. नुसः (सर्देरः) सेरः तनुमा

I read that book some time ago.

ब्रिंब या ब्रेंब पहिंगा था वहिंद या रेद।

Anciently (of yore) the five prefixes were pronounced.

देटक्टाहेरिकुः क्षेत्रुम्।

Now-a-days they are not

८४/५ये.क.८े.चा.स.ल८.क्रे८.वेय.ग्रीका ५५ग।

I cannot find the book anywhere.

माद धेर गुद दश दे द स्थ अंदिर मी शे **५**५ग।

At all events I do not see it now.

पर्5'5'र्नेग।

Come here.

**८५**.२.स.लूट.।

Do not come here.

मि.शट.प्रि.ष्ट्र.तर.त्रुध.श्रट.।

They went away yesterday.

প্রসাধনের মার্ট্রা

Go away immediately.

मीतर्मा

रूपः कुंदः मिशः नः उदः अर्गुनिशः में नेनः कीः He always speaks very fast. **दर्गा** 

विश्वायायादे दशायश्रास्य विश्वामी भी **५** नुमा

I do not understand him easily.

GZ-A-CZ-A-D-1

Do not make so much noise.

<u> लु</u>र-रेश:भूर-केब:यॅ: पर्-पर्-त्र:कुन-बब:र्वे नवायार्दे रहेर।

Why are you talking so loudly?

म् म वरे हिर वा भर का इट दें ना हमा বপ্র-শূ-বর্শা

This lama is only telling you the truth.

रे-इटाविश्रक्ष-देश्वर-विश्वश्चामटाय-५-उटा-श्च-गु.षश.स्रेचश.सूट.।

The judge came to court very early to-day.

शट केर्निट शे रें नेर में अदित्में or नेर Probably he will be late to-morrow. ME.CM I

र.ज. ४८.च. ज.च. २.ज.बुर. सेचा.क्र.च.क्र. र्थे द्वा

Just now it is terribly hot in Calcutta.

ট্রিং ২০ দীম বৃত্তি দ্রিমম দিশেম বৃত্তির Take the money to court কুশ।

sonally.

र् मा किट किट पर्ट मिन मार्नेन मार्नेन मा पर्टेश How old is this little child?

**५१.५५१.**मान्सः स्नाधाः

What pleasant weather!

त्रैत्र्रे : अन्य याम्येयायाया

What a cutting breeze!

**५१.५५५.जम.जा.लचा.चा.ला** 

What an excellent road!

457452 B. B. 2.41

What an enormous dog!

**५**९.५५५.लम् मार्सेगया

What a thick branch!

**५५%५५% अंश्रेष्ट्रायाया** 

What a beautiful girl!

र्नेन र्रे क्षेत्र हिंद पर्वेद पर के क्षेत्र यदै रेंदेरन्यामारे सेदा

Wait a little: why are you so impatient?

मिर्गेश मिट याती वर्षे वर्षे वर्षे र्वेश रमामा रे:रे51

Why are you building this house?

(or Coll. ८४)। मिल्यां संस्थान स्थान स्था

Why is the child crying like that?

Have all the servants gone on ahead?

First you must turn to the right, then to the left, and then go straight on for a distance of about twelve paces.

स्रेट्र-पार्ट्र-। व्रिट्र-पार्श-पार्ट्य-सार्थ्य-पार्-स्या When you reach the road end. shout to me.

मिट य पर्दे भारति मारा मा भारति ।

There are rats everywhere in this house.

म्यमान्द्रवहार्डे हे ह्योद्धाः समान्द्रतः सुदामाः र्वेदः दे**द**।

How far is it from Calcutta to Darjeeling?

नगतः त्रिंब सुदः हे स्त्रीट ब्रायमा के ये से द

Is Kalimpong close to or far away from Darjeeling?

नाइति य प्रमा दे भागा दे प्रमा दे प्रम दे प्रमा दे प्रम दे प्रमा दे प्रमा दे प्रम दे

## § 33. Postpositions.

What we call PREPOSITIONS, such as Of, To, In, On, By, With, From, About, Concerning, etc., and certain Prepositional phrases like By reason of, For the sake of, With respect to, According to, Instead of, etc., are rendered in Tibetan by Postpositions, some of which are simple, and others compound.

The SIMPLE POSTPOSITIONS consist of the primitive particles which are used in the formation of the Cases. (See § 25.)

As regards the *Nominative Case*, no such particles are used. (See § 25, I.)

As regards the Vocative Case. (See § 25, II.)

As regards the Accusative Case, no particle is necessary, but if desired the Postposition a may be inserted. Ex.:—

Or :— क्श.वे.स्.ज.वेशक्त.तु.वेट.क्रे.४८च।

With this case the postpositions  $\P^{\eta}$ ,  $\P^{\eta}$ , and  $\P^{\eta}$ , As far as, Up to, To, Till, are used.

N.B.—The following verbs may be used either with the bare accusative or with that and the postposition

মুদ্দা, দাব্যানা, ব্রুমানা, মুদ্দা, To give, to deliver.

NATU NATU. To teach.

AZTI, AATI, To tell, To explain.

ই্র্ম, স্থ্রব্রবিষাপ্তম, স্থ্রব্দের্হাপ্তমা, To show.

g'7', To petition, To beg, To offer.

ন্দ্ৰি, To fear, To be afraid of.

র্শ্বিত্য To strike against.

ইন্মানুহ'ম' To help, To aid.

ABTWITT To bring.

As regards the Genitive Case, the particles are \$\mathbb{\eta}\$, \$\mathbb{\eta}\$, \$\mathbb{\eta}\$, \$\mathbb{\eta}\$. (see § 25, IV). Ex.:-

भ्राना माना । The sheep's head, or the head of the sheep.

মু নে নি তি The bull's horn, or the horn of the bull.

ধ্মান্থান্ত্ৰী A dialect of the Colloquial.

यना भेदा ने निर्देश Price of bread.

সুমামাণ্ট্রাম্বারা। The foolishness of pride.

শিন্ন নির্দ্ধির কার্ন্ত কার্ব। The height of this house.

स्रेश्राद्यक्रिंगुःस्टा। वे दूरानी के परमीस्मारा or रेगाय। এনাথাইতি দ্বী দ্বীমথ | मद्रायादेवे अर्थे दस्र जित्ते हिंग्या सर्क्सरा बृद्धि:ख्राव। मार्भद्र-भर्मा

The woman's name.

The danger of uncertainty.

The wisdom of the East.

The law of custom.

The height of that house.

The end of a chapter.

The handle of an axe.

The colour of a turquoise.

As regards the Dative Case, the particle used is A (see § 25, V).

As regards the Agentive Case, the particles used are ম', দ্বাম', গ্রাম', নীম', ব্ম', and অম' (see § 25, VI). Ex.:-

विशःतुःश्र<sup>ः</sup>तुसश<sup>्</sup>रःतुरःणुः ५५ण।

He loves the girl.

प्रशःस्वाः देव**ः वशरः** श्रेटः ।

The hawk killed the pigeon.

पर्वेबान्ध्रश्चितः अन्त्रात्रेचा।

The dragon is eating the moon.

८.४८.चीश.४तं.क.५.झैंचश.लूर।

I have read that book.

<u> चिंद्र, गुन्ना भहें मी मी जा भारत जुन्ना श्राटर है।</u>

Have you hurt your finger?

দিবি সেথম (or ধম) দিবিবম্বা His father taught him.

**刻口** 

प्रि. मुंचिश राष्ट्रा तथा या विश स्ट्रा

His companion did the work.

सुद्दर्गुंश्यायः देनाशुक्तागुः तन्न।

Weeds are choking the corn.

ଞ୍ଜି୩'ଜୟ'ଶ୍ୱିଷ' ଶିଂସ୍ପୟଷ' ୫୯'ସ୍ଲି କ୍ରିଁ ସଂଶ୍ରିଟ

Discipline improves all men.

गुै.परमा

न्मित. ब्रूट. नीम. सक्षमा सक्षमा प्र. विशे will sometimes kill people.

42ल.मीश.मि.श्रर.च.च.इश.परेचा।

Money vuined him.

श्चर्याम्यार्चियार्

This man helped him.

শ্বমান্ত্রীক্রম্বর্জন or কর্ The heat killed my horse.
নমান্ত্রীক্রম্বর্জন।

As regards the Locative Case the particles used are :-

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} A' \\ A' \end{array}\right\} \ In, \ On, \ At, \ By, \ \text{etc.}$$

স্ক্রুন্'বৃষ্ণ' Through.

5.
5.
8.
In, On, At, By, etc.
8.

(See § 25, vii.)

As regards the *Periodal* or *Durational Case*, the particles used are and At, In, During, etc.

(See § 25, viii.)

As regards the Modal Case, the particles used are:-

ላኝ By, Through, By way of, Via.

5<sup>C</sup> Against, With, e.g., with verbs of meeting, fighting, payin; respect to, visiting, etc.

N' (Silent) With, Because, Since, etc.

 $\mathfrak{Z}^{\mathfrak{T}}$  (Rather literary) By, Through, On account of, For, By reason of etc.

As regards the Ablative Case, in the limited sense in which it is used in this Manual, the particles used are:—

Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

$$\left. \begin{array}{c} \P N \\ \P \end{array} \right\} \ Unless.$$

(See  $\S 25$ , x.)

As regards the *Terminative Case*, which in this Manual includes certain aspects of what is usually called the Ablative Case, the particles used are:—

5, 5, 5, 3, and W, signifying Direction towards, and 55, 5, and WN, signifying Direction from. (See § 25, xi.)

Of the COMPOUND POSTPOSITIONS, most are used with the Genitive Case. The following are a few of them:—

र्हेक्.ज. ) रहेक्.ज. )	About, Concerning, Regarding, With respect to.
र्नेबःयः	On behalf of, For the sake of, With the object of, For the purpose of, In order to.
<del>টু</del> প <b>ন্টু</b> শ	On account of, By reason of, In consequence of, Through, By. Because of.
됐다. 최다.ज. ) 최다.ज. )	Above (on top of), $Upon$ .
M.J. or M.Z.	Above (Higher up).
बट.यंब <b>ब.</b> )	According to, As, Like.
ર્ત્યોબ.ઝ.	Amidst, Among, In the middle of.

```
Behind, Back, Afterwards, Next.
                    Before (place), In front of.
                   Into the presence of.
                   Instead of, In place of.
4E.44.
                   From within.
שביש.
                   Inside, Within, In.
₹.U.
                   Just by, At the side of.
₹
প্রবাংক্টার্মী (used with বৃষ্ণ)
5장'대 During.
মৃত্য In reply or answer to, In return for.
            Below, Under, Beneath, After.

Towards.
The following are used with the Accusative.
५८.अ३अ.५.
55 हैं दें हैं । With, i.e., Along with, Together with, In company with.
```

55'75' or 55'95'9' Equal to.

553 Ti Near to.

**5**ር ፯፫ ፻፫ Far from.

প্রণা Until, For (time), As far as, For (space).

Save, Except.

EXAMPLES.

दशरेवे रेंबया **४८ सामिस** गुरे भेरे।

I know all about that.

मिलमित्रे तेर स्थान वा सेन यदे वसानी श्चेर प्रमध्य ४ उर देश दर

Ask him all about his journey to Tibet.

परे देंब रमामी बट प्रिक से पर्मा

श्राक्षेत्राचेदानुष्याचीशान्तार्शेदा।

मिन्नोब परि बद प्रविक प्रसादा देता।

This is not according to reason.

The people died in consequence of the famine.

He behaved like a fool.

द्रमा भे कें अभ वद ने हेश य द्रोंनी दर्गे में <u>नुस्य परित्र</u>

The soldiers used to march after the Amban.

रेंद्रे. स. मी. झंट. जा मोटश. बेर.ट्रॉ. रट. श्रे **५५म।** 

There is not much snow on that hill.

दर्वः सर्वयासाद्भी।

Do not walk before me.

मिर्के मुल म देव में केंद्रे दूर दूर दूर्य स्थाय 351

They came into the presence of the Dalai Lama.

क्ष.ची.र्ष.जय.ट.ज.चूर्य.चर्चमाला।

Let me write in reply to that letter.

हिंद्र-ग्री-म्यिम-ये देश-य के द्रारासक्रा-र येत्र केमा मा रेड्।

Your servant may go with the coolies.

अन्मन्तर्था (or नर.ट्रे.) ट.र्ट्र. Come with me as far as that house.

## § 34. Conjunctions.

1. In Tibetan the use, as in English, of Conjunctions like And and But is generally avoided, and the sentence is reconstructed, so as to begin with a subordinate participial clause, of which clauses there is often a long string before the principal verb is reached.

EXAMPLE:-

Here the sentence is turned into: That house not being mine, I cannot give it to you.

Not being, the negative form of the participle present of the verb To be, is rendered ਨੀਰ ਹਾਪ The affirmative form Being, would be ਘੋਰ ਧਾਕਾ, or ਘੋਰ ਧਾਕਾ।

2. But where the Disjunctive idea is sought to be expressed the form 5.WL' is used thus:—

PRC याया मी दिरे प्येद दापाद दे दश हिंद That house is mine, but I cannot give it to you.

Here the sentence is turned into: Though that house is mine, (yet) I cannot give it to you.

3. It would be quite allowable, however, to avoid using the Conjunctions altogether, and simply say:—

দেশের বাদির নির্বা বিশেষ্ট্র সেইন That house is not mine. I cannot give it to you.

- 4. Instead of JUK, as above, WK alone, or JK according to the final of the preceding word, or the gerundial particles  $\tilde{\zeta}$  (after final  $\tilde{\zeta}$ ),  $\tilde{\zeta}$  (after final  $\tilde{\zeta}$ ), and  $\tilde{\zeta}$ ) or  $\tilde{\zeta}$  (after final  $\tilde{\zeta}$ ),  $\tilde{\zeta}$ ,  $\tilde{\zeta}$ , and all vowels) may be used. Thus:—
- 5. Another way of expressing the same idea is the following:—

  [মান্দ্র
- 6. As illustrative of similar formations in connection with verbs other than  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{T}}^{\mathsf{T}}$  and  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{T}}^{\mathsf{T}}^{\mathsf{T}}$ , note the following:—
- न्द्रा सद्दी नवर् द्राप्त द्राप्त द्राहे न्द्री द्राव Though it was snowing hard I set out for Darjeeling.
- ক্রম্ন্ত্রমান্ত্রমান্ত্র (or স্বাম্ভিন্ত) As, since, or because it was not raining I set out for Darjeeling.
- ক্রম্মান্ত্রমান
- ক্রম্মের্মির্মির্ম্ (or ব্রহ্মের্মে) As it is not raining I shall set out. মের্ম্ব্র্মেন্ট্রেম্
- रूपः शेष्ट्राच्याः स्प्राच्याः स्प्राच्याः स्था It is not raining, but I shall not set out.
- 7. The expression Either...or, is rendered by ঋষ্ণ, or by জ্মা, কুমা, etc., or by ঋষ্ট্ৰেক্ Thus:—

लायकरायामारशासुनादे में रेट्। Either it is about to rain or about न्रः यद्यामाद्याद्याद्याद्याः रेत्। to snow. Or:--कर यथार क्यार राय वर तर्वे देर ने नहीं में अद अंद द हिंद द में में रेद Either, lord, you will go or you will hang. MC. 항소 소. 문고. 방. 너. 김리. 다. 그렇게 와. 421.2512.ME.1 ८.स्तर्थः रचीतः लुबः लटः धुबःषः रचीः तः એં 1 Either I am right or wrong. Or :— ८.रचादा.लुब.ब्य.शुब.ब्या

1s the horse in the stable or not?

8. If is rendered by the expression নামাই or নামাই or, as

is more usual, by  $\P$  alone. Thus:—

নামার্থির হ'র (or বের্নার)।

Or simply:—

ত্রেনার (or বের্নার)।

Ditto.

The second and third persons also take this 🗓 or ६५ निव

Thus:—
ট্রিন্মেম্রের (or ব্রুল্র)!

If thou art, or wert, right.

মিন্দামান্ত্ৰ (or মুন্দাৰ) | If he is, or were, right.

So with the verb To have :--

प्राचारी प्राचित्र (or तम्मान)। If I have, or had, good fortune.

And similarly for the other two persons.

With verbs other than  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$  and  $\mathsf{R5}$  (To be, or To have), the conditional sign  $\mathsf{5}$  is simply added to the verbal root, Present, or Perfect, for all persons. Thus:—

ਨੇ ਉ` ' ' ਨ' But if, is confined to Literary Tibetan.

9. Expressions like Ago, and Since, in the sense of From the time that, are rendered thus:—

टश.च.भ.च = श.च.भ.जू.च श्रिभ.शूट.। Or:--Eश.च.च = श.च श.जू.च श्रिभ.शूट.।

Three years ago I ate meat; or, It is three years since I ate meat; or, I have not eaten meat for three years.

10. Our common conjunction And is expressed by  $5^{-}$  meaning with, used as an enclitic, but only the first two nouns in a series are connected by it, however numerous the series may be. Thus:—

5ुर्स र्हेन्द्र हुर्स क्रुव्याद्र प्रतिकेष्ट्र प्रशिष्ट and death tarry for nobody.

Between two Imperatives, especially in Literary Tibetan, And is rendered by A. Thus:—

्रेमा त्रा भेषा। Come and see.

In Literary Tibetan, moreover, in addition to 55° and A, And and But are rendered by W5° and M5°, and by the gerundial particles

 $\Im \Gamma$ ,  $\Im \Gamma$ , or  $\Im \Gamma$ , and  $\Im \Gamma$ ,  $\Im \Gamma$  or  $\Im \Gamma$ , especially in sentences in which And occurs frequently, and it is desired to vary the particle. Thus:—

कुल्रियम्बर्धाः विष्यः अतिहास्याः विष्यः अतिहास्याः

ट्रॅन्नॉर्नेर्-हेट-वर्शय-य-स्र्। ट्रॅन्नॉर्नेर्-हेट-वर्शय-य-स्र्।

होर स्वा रे र्या मी र्योप स्थार्थे था। स्याप्तर मुर्दे त्या मेर र्या क्या स्थार्थे स्यार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्ये स्थार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्ये स्थार्थे स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्थे स्थार्थे स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये स्थार्ये Eating flesh and drinking blood (Das).

Tall and well made. (D.)

Heat is hurtful (but) cold is beneficial. (D.)

As you are of high and noble birth. (D.)

If I have prophecy and know all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. (1 Corinthians xiii. 2.)

Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord. And touch no unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be to you a Father, and ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Almighty. (2 Corinthians vi. 17, 18.)

11. In the Colloquial WE or, after final T, 5, 5, or N, JE may signify And, Either, Neither, or Nor, according to the context. At the beginning of sentences the following are common: A However, But, Well; WAJE However, But, Moreover; A Then; A Then; A Then; A Then, In that case, Consequently

EXAMPLES:—

लट.कुँश.चुना।

And behold

<u> ব্র</u>े'য়'য়'ঽ'ড়ঢ়ড়৾ঢ়

There is no sugar either.

वें संभरमेर।

Nor milk.

वें क्रेंरणूट केर।

Nor milk-jug.

श्रीवणादार्भित्रायात्रमें शाव।

However, if you want them.

दे क्या विस्रक्ष द्वें के नीका वर्षे के दाया मासूद 7:251

Then the judge said to the prisoner.

देवे क्रेब प्रश्न दश दश हिंद त्य वर्द वर्षना না শ্বৰ।

In that case I shall acquit you.

दें न दर्गे दश्याया साम सहंदश।

Well, don't be angry.

The Literary equivalent of wather But, However, is at many

Whether is expressed by using the interrogative duplicative Thus:-suffix.

८ ५ ना दि स्पर्न ५ इस से ५ ५ इस स्वर विश हो **५**५मा

Whether I am right or not, who knows?

दे-विनाविनाधिक क्याक्षेक्क्य दश विशाणी मेर।

Whether it is correct or not, I do not know.

करायायवाल्याद्याकाल्याक्षराज्ञराज्ञरात्र्यः गोःरेर।

Whether it will rain or not, who can say?

मिं वेंब शेंट ट्रम स शेंट मिंद रूट मीश वेश Whether he set out or not, you know. ট্র বেশ্বনা

OR may be expressed either as explained in clause 7 of this §, or thus:—

मिं द्विम्थागु दर्माम्याम स्क्रिंग मु दर्मा Is he hungry or thirsty? 14. As to the use of Conjunctions with Numerals, see § 26, II, Note 3.

# § 35. THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB W54 To be.

The primary meaning of this verb is To exist, To be present, but it is often used attributively, i.e., as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, and also as an auxiliary to other verbs.

As a substantive verb and when used attributively it may be conjugated thus:—

#### PRESENT INDICATIVE.

## Affirmative.

दत्र देखें इ.स.	I am here.	দর্ক্ত বিশ্ব উপ	We are here.
ট্রিবেইড্রন্থির, or ব্রুশা	Thou art here.	ট্রির্নির কিন্তুর ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন ক্রিন্ত ক্রিন্ত ক	You are here.
মিন্ট্রেম্ট্র, or ন্দুদা, or মিন্নেইব। (pronounced yo'-a-re').		विकें विदेश अपितः, or विकें विदेश अपितः विदेश	They are here.

There being no difference between the singular and plural constructions, only the singular will henceforth be given.

মৃত্তি and বৃত্তি connected as above with the third person, may also be used for phrases like There is, There was, There are, There were, etc. Thus:—

मूँ दिन्न स्टिन क्रिन क

EXT: also may apparently be so used when the speaker expresses knowledge derived from information. Thus:—

रैदै'य' में 'छ्रेट' त्राम्ह्रा प्रिंत् दारेत् द्रा Is there snow on that hill or not? प्रिंत्यामार्स्र रेत्।

भन्नहा २५-दास देन।

No, there is not.

According, however, to Mr. C. A. Bell, W5 55 implies uncertainty.

future root WE, for all persons, is sometimes used for the present tense, when vagueness or indefiniteness is implied. Thus:-र्रामिति निर्भाशिकार उन्हें पुण्या हैं There are wild animals down in ME.I

An Intensive form of W5'4" is \$15'4", similarly conjugated, but not now in use.

An elegant Literary form, not much used however, is:-

মঠ্রম

I am.

मार्द्र

Thou art.

मकेश, or महतः or मकेशयाधीका He is.

And the Respectful form is:—

বৰীনাগ্ন.

I am.

צובע.

Thou art.

प्रदेश or श्राट्य, or चर्षमाश्रासःगुर ।

He is.

Negative of W5.41

C'S'3'NS

I am not there.

हिंदिन देश अंदर्ग।

Thou art not here.

मित्रें उंभेर, or अंतर्म, or अंद. He is not here.

यभरें ।

Interrogative Form.

মেন্ডিঅন্সা, অন্ত, or অন্ত।

Am I here?

Attributive.

Colloquially,  $abla \overline{A}^{\bullet}$  is sometimes pronounced  $abla a^{\bullet}$ -pu, instead of  $abla a^{\bullet}$ -po.

In some phrases, like the following, 357 and not 57 is used with the first person; probably because there is really no nominative "I," but the construction is "There is to me."

Moreover, the phrase is conjugated with में, etc. Thus:—

ाम्प्रमाद्रमा।

I am cold.

ाक्षीद्रमा।

I am ill.

ट.फ्रिंचोश्च ग्री.पर्नेची। ट.फ्रेंचोश्च ग्री.पर्नेची।

I am hungry.

I am thirsty.

#### IMPERFEOT INDICATIVE.

This may be formed just like the Present Indicative, the context generally sufficing to show what the tense is. Thus:—

## Affirmative.

P- אביבים ליש שלין

I was here yesterday.

मिश्रदार्ह्चेरप्रदेशकार्थेर, or पर्ना

Thou wast here yesterday.

मिश्रदमित्री उप्पेर, or त्रुवा or

He was here yesterday.

ळॅर्यरेर्।

र्श्वेन ता प्रमान

I was rich once.

र्ध्वयाधिराधुनार्थे प्रेर, or तर्ना।

Thou wast rich once.

र्ध्वायमियुनार्थिष, or त्रुना, or He was rich once.

व्यद्भार देन।

Apart from contextual indications as above, this tense may also be formed with the aid of the auxiliary verbs  $\sqrt[3]{5}$  and  $\sqrt[3]{5}$ . Thus:—

## Affirmative.

८.५५.२.लूर.च.लूब।

I was here.

मुँद्धित्त्वद्दैः उः प्रदेशाः विकारम् विकारम्

Thou wast here.

sionally WTTTT

দিন্দির ইত্তাইন or occasionally He was here.

ळॅरमः तर्ना

Negative.

८.५५.५.स.भूष. (vulgarly अव.)। I was not here.

हिंद्दिः उ. १५ व.स. १५। इ. १५ व.स. १५

Thou wast not here.

He was not here.

Attributive.

दःधुनार्थे ॲन्स्येन्। ब्रिन्धुनार्थे ॲन्सन्न्। ब्रिन्धुनार्थे ॲन्सन्न्।

I was rich.

Thou wast rich.

He was rich.

Interrogative.

८.पर्-दे.प्र.प्र.प्र.प्र. or त्र्यं प्रश्ना Was I here?

(or 디자 Wast thou here? or 디), or 때투고" 씨주주자 (or 디자, or 디)

मित्रे उ. २५ दारे ५ दार (or दारा:, Was he here?

And so forth.

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as the Imperfect Indicative. Thus:—

YANTAS WI I have, or had, been here before.

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

#### FUTURE.

The Future Simple is expressed Colloquially by WC for all persons.

Thus:—

Affirmative.

I shall be here.

\$\tilde{F}\$ \quad \text{7.5 \text{WL}}\$ Thou will be here.

He will be here.

#### Attributive.

ন্দ্র্মিন, or, in Literature, I shall be good.

মিন্দাইন্সিন, or, in Literature, He will be good.
ঘ্রাম্মেন্মুম্মে

N.B.—5 or 52 in Literary Tibetan should not be used as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, nor should it be used substantively, but only as an auxiliary to verbs.

Negative (Col.).

८.५५.२.श.लूट.।

I shall not be here.

ट.लचे.च्.श्र.लट.।

I shall not be good.

And so throughout, inserting & before WT'

Interrogative (Col.).

And so throughout. Also with W, or W Thus:—

Shall I be good?

The other tenses (which really represent the Conditional) are as follows:—

#### Literary.

८.५५.२.जूर.चर.प्रीर.रू.।

I shall be here.

And so for all persons.

८.४५.२.ज्.सर.चैर.त्र.स्.स्.स्.स्.

I would be here.

हिर्देशकार्यात्यान्त्रे,

Thou wouldst be here.

or 353

मिंद वर् र सेंद्र सर मुर सरे र दें,

He would be here.

от दर्गाम्।

८.४१.३.७५.४४.मु.४.४.छ५.६।

I would have been here.

हिर्दर्उ: अर्ग्न प्रमुक्त स्वर्म में ।

Thou wouldst have been here.

मिट पर्ने उ.सर मर मीर मा स्रेर्ट्र,

He would have been here.

or त्रुमार्चे, or धेर्यरेर्दे।

#### SUBJUNCTIVE.

Phrases like If I am, If I be, Should I be ... then ... I will or would be; or, If I were ... then ... I would be, or would have been, are formed, for the present tense, by using the expression ANT ... WITT, or ANT or ANT ... WITT, or ANT for all persons, and then using the future root WE. Thus:—

#### Attributive Present.

नाभा ने द्युना द्यं प्यें ने द्युना द्यं प्यें ने प्यें ने द्यं प्यें ने प्ये

For the past tense the construction is similar, save that  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  for Would have been, are used instead of  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ , or  $\widetilde{Q}_{5}$  for Would have been, are used instead of  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ , though for Would be  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  may also be used.

प्रमाधि प्रमाधि प्रमाधि (or प्रमाधि) क्षेत्र If I were, or had I been, rich, I would be, or would have been, comfortable.

प्रमाधि प्रमाधि प्रमाधि (or प्रमाख) क्षेत्र If thou, etc., thou wouldst be, or

ট্রিন্ত্রনার্থিন্দর (or বরুদার) শ্বিন্তর If thou, etc., thou wouldst be. or wouldst have been, comfortable.
ইন্দ্রেন্ত্রনা, or অন্থান্থ্রনা, or শ্বিন্তান্তর্ভানিক্রনার কর্মান্ত্রনার কর্মান্তর করেন্ত্রনার কর্মান্ত্রনার কর্মান্তর কর্মান্ত্রনার কর্মান্ত্র

मिं युना र्रे प्रेंन (or त्नुनान) क्रीन If he, etc., he would be, or would have been, comfortable.

मिं युना र्रे प्रेंन, or प्रेंन प्रात्नुन, or क्रीन प्रेंन प्रेंन, or त्नुन, or वुट।

## Substantively (Col.).

The construction is just the same as when used attributively.

## Negative.

सेर्द instead of धेर्द, or पर्माद Same construction, but with Thus:-

If I am not, etc., I will not be comfortable.

The Literary attributive construction is:-

If I am rich I shall be happy.

Had I been rich I would have been happy.

#### POTENTIAL.

Phrases expressive of ability to be present, or ability to be anything (e.g. good), are rendered with the aid of \$7.4 To be able, or by that and other auxiliaries, added to the root of  $\mathbb{W}5^*\mathbb{Z}^*$ Thus :-

## Present.

Past.

## PROBABILITY.

Phrases expressive of likelihood or probability of being present, or of being anything (e.g., good), are rendered by means of 의원기 경기 경기 경기 기가 Thus, Colloquially:—

Present.

प्रिमा क्रेन् देन प्रिने देन प्रिने देन प्रिने देन प्रिकेट प्रिके

N.B.— অব্সূত্রা, আন্ত্রা, and similar expressions are sometimes written অব্স্নার্থা আন্ত্রা, etc. The correct form is probably স্বা, but this is not quite clear.

Past.

महिना नेदाद प्रदेश कि प्र

Similarly with भाषा Good, instead of 95.5 Here.

## Negative.

As regards the phrases in which অব্যাব্য and অব্লা occur, the negative construction is to change these into মব্যাব্য or মব্লা, or মব্লা Ex.:—

८.५५.५.मी. होन्य Perhaps I shall not be here.

## Literary.

This construction is in \$\sqrt{5}\sqrt{2}\cdot\ To be possible, combined, sometimes with the Verbal Root, but usually with the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus:—

다구경·অ도 (or অ도) 최·최도 I may not be there.

C'S'T'WS'US' (or WS') YS'U' I might be there.

येव व

মের র বি (or আর ) শ্বর্মণ I might not be there.

다구·경·전도 (or 교도) 활동·디앤드 I might have been there.

다 등 등 전 대 대 대 대 대 대 Have been there.

There is also another construction in ATICA. To calculate. reckon, used thus:—

3r.1

It may be so; I reckon, or guess it is so.

#### HORTATIVE.

Phrases like Must, Ought, Should (in these senses), Need, Want, etc., to be, are rendered by means of 5 NK, or perhaps more Colloquially ্র্নান, or by that and other auxiliaries, added to the root of অন্তি Thus:--

Past.

୮୯୮୧ଟି ଓ ଅନ୍ୟୁଷ୍ଟ ଓଡ଼ିଶ୍ୱ or କୁମୁଷ୍ଟ I should have been here. To me it was necessary to be here. it was necessary to be here. मुँद तदे दु भिद द्वीं श्रा देन , or द्वीं श्रा Thou shouldst have been here. . મિંલર્ રું અર दर्भे अप देर, or दर्भे अ' He should have been here.

Or (instead of 35) W5, or 359 for all persons.

N.B.—If there is an adverb to show the tense, the Past may be constructed like the Present.

#### PURPOSIVE.

Phrases like That...may or might be; In order that...may or might be; So that...may or might be; In order to be, etc., are expressed by means of the Infinitive put in the Genitive Case and followed by 55.2 or, in Literary Tibetan.

That I may (or might) be here.

So that he may (or might) be safe.

The Literary construction is to put \$\tilde{\Pi}\mathbb{T}\tilde{\Pi}\$ in the Terminative Case followed by \$\mathbb{J}\tilde{\Pi}\$ or \$\mathbb{J}\tilde{\Pi}\tilde{\Pi}\$ in the Genitive Case, and winding up with \$\mathbb{Z}\tilde{\Pi}\tilde{\Pi}\tilde{\Pi}\$. Thus:—

Or the construction may be in AJTT put in the Genitive Case and followed by ST. Thus:--

रे. र्या श्रम् उर् प्रमें र्यो र्यो र्यो प्रमें प्

#### [MPERATIVE.

Regarded as a substantive verb, its Imperative would perhaps best be expressed, as in Literary Tibetan, by W5'U5', or, more emphatically, W5'U5'J5', literally Become being, or Begin to exist. Thus:—

Such an expression, however, would probably never be used in fact. A Tibetan would ordinarily say:—

Come here at midday.

If the idea of origination, or becoming, be implied, the proper Imperative would probably be 55. Negative & 35.

গুর্ব্বার্থারের ব্রান্ত্রার্থা (or better Be here at midday; i.e., Make to be here, etc.

 $(N.B.-\frac{5}{3}N^{\circ})$  is vulgar Colloquial.  $\frac{5}{3}N^{\circ}$  is sometimes used instead of  $\frac{5}{3}N^{\circ}$ , but  $\frac{5}{3}N^{\circ}$  seems more correct.)

Negative:-

केन नुमारायां प्रदेश को दायां होता, or क्षेत्र Do not be here at midday. या प्रमुद्देश, or क्षेत्र या क्षेत्र

Note that in prohibitions the Imperative takes the Present Root of the verb.

When used attributively the Imperative of 诞气况 is, in the Colloquial, formed with the auxiliary verbs 引气况, 马引气况 and 对氧气况 just mentioned. Thus:—

अर्गेज्ञ स'ग्रेन्', or नुस', or में स', or सिंहिं। Be quick.

Negatively:

Another way, which, however, is rather Hortative than Imperative, is to use the auxiliary verb 55000 In this case, there being no real

Imperative root, and what is said being only a statement of fact and not a command, the negative  $\mathfrak{A}$ , instead of  $\mathfrak{A}$ , is used. Thus:—

बेर से रमें श

Do not be afraid. Literally, Fearing, or fear, is not necessary.

The enclitic particles  $\overline{S}\Pi$  (after final  $\Pi$ ,  $\Gamma$  or  $\Gamma$ , and after anything in the Colloquial),  $\overline{S}\Pi$  (after all vowels, or after final  $\Gamma$ ,  $\Gamma$ ,  $\Gamma$ , or  $\Gamma$ , or  $\Gamma$ , and  $\overline{S}\Pi$  (after final  $\Gamma$ ), are only used for peremptory orders and stern commands. Ordinarily they are omitted. Even then the order is softened in various ways, e.g. by using the polite expression  $\overline{\Gamma}\Pi$   $\overline{\Gamma}\Gamma$ , or the still politer one  $\overline{\Gamma}\Pi$   $\overline{\Gamma}\Gamma$  Please. Thus:—

यदेश्यदेश्योषेट. रूप्तोश्राचीयेट.।

Please be careful.

क्रूट हे सेर या सानेर रेना सानेर।

Please do not be cruel.

When addressing equals or inferiors familiarly, the following constructions may be adopted:—

अर्गुन्थरार्था नेतर्दर or नुस्रानिनान्दर।

Now then, be quick; or Do be quick.

Do be punctual.

A more Literary form would be:-

शुभश्यम्बर्श्यस्य मुद्रास्त्रस्य ।

Now, do be comforted.

#### PRECATIVE.

This is formed with the aid of Literary and or Colloquial again (the Perfect Root), Imperatives of the verb again To allow, added in Colloquial to the Root, or, in Literature, to the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

Thus :--

८:५८:२ॅंग्ॲर्'न&म्। ८:५८:२ॅंग्ॲर्'न&म्'हेम्। ८:५८:२ॅंग्ॲर्'न&म्' (हेम्') २ॅन्स्'म्|५८'

or रॅन्न्श-ग्रेर'।

८'५८'र्थे'ॲ५'यद्धम्। (ठेमाः) ५८'।

८:५८:दी:ॲ५:वड्यांखा

मिन्दारी विन्तुना

दशः हिंदः द्रायाः व्याप्तः वद्धनाः शेष्येदः

विसादाददार्थे अदावद्यानी देदायसा,

or परिवालूट.एश।

Let me be first.

Let him be first.

I shall not let thee be first.

Will he let me be first?

Literary.

८.८.चू.लू. १ व्या. १ व्या. १ व्या. १

Let me be first.

Or:—The root of the verb ঊ্ব্য may be put in the terminative case, and the auxiliary verb স্ম্মের used. Thus:—

८५८ चॅ ॲर्र्ज्यास्थ्रिय थे।

Pray let me be first; I beg you to let me be first.

#### PERMISSIVE.

This is formed with the aid of 5777 To be allowed. Thus:—

८.४५.२.छूर.कूचा or कूचामाः छूर।
मूर्य रे.२.जूर.कूचा or कूचामाः खर।
मूर्य रे.२.जूर.कूचा or कूचामाः पर्वेचा।
ह्या रे.२.जूर.कूचा or कूचामाः पर्वेचा।
ह्या रे.२.जूर.कूचा वा कूचामाः पर्वेचा।

I may be here. I am allowed to be here.

Thou art allowed to be here.

He is allowed to be here.

I was allowed to be here.

Interrogatively:-

#### OPTATIVE.

This is formed with the aid of  $\mathcal{A}^{\mathsf{T}}$ , the Imperative of  $\mathcal{A}^{\mathsf{T}}$ .

To come. Thus:—

다 (의) 국경행동 (디) 주의 Oh, or Would, that I were there.

The construction is the same for all persons.

In Literary Tibetan :—

다 (지) 국경교 지기 및 Would I were there. And so for all persons.

#### INFINITIVE.

মৃত্য To be present, To exist. Or, attributively, To be anything (e.g., good).

ર્બેર્પાયું To have been, etc.

अंद्रिं ( or अंद्रिं ) अंद्रिय। To be about to be.

In Literary Tibetan the Infinitive is also  $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ', but it is often seen in the terminative case, as  $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ', Thus:—

घरः) ट्रदेशस्य अग्रीशस्य । इदेशस्य अग्रीशस्य ।

We know that thou art a teacher.

That is, We know thee TO BE a teacher.

Again: ---

ট্রি**ন্** শূরাম্বর্ম ( or অর্থার ) নমম।

Whom makest thou thyself? Literally, Who thinkest thou that thou art? That is, Who thinkest thou thyself TO BE?

Colloquially these would be:-

দ্র্ভিন্ ক্রিন্ ক্রিন্ ক্রিন্ ক্রিন্ ক্রিন্ ক্রিন্ (or ক্রিন্ত্র্ন) We know thee to be a teacher.

ত্রের্জিন ক্রিন্ডা দুর্ভিন্ত্র্ন (or ক্রিন্ত্র্ন )

শূর্ণীপ্রমের্মার্মির্মা (or শুর্মাণ) Who thinkest thou thyself to be?

Sometimes the plain root is found in Literary Tibetan used in an Infinitive sense. Thus:—

ই দ্বা দীম দিনে মম দ্বাদাম ঠ দি বি বি বি বি বি কালে to be (have been, or that he was) in the company (Luke ii. 44).

Where mandatory Imperative verbs like *Tell*, or *Order*, govern (in English) an Infinitive, the proper way of rendering the phrase in Tibetan is to turn the Infinitive into an Imperative. Thus:—

मिल सुर्जे अनुरायन।

Tell him not to be late.

मिं के ता क्या या या पर्ने उ जिंगा हिमा Order them to be here at dawn.

#### PARTICIPLES.

having only one root, the Present and Past Participles are the same and exactly like the Infinitive. Thus:—

ᢅᢍᠮᡪ᠊ᠽᢇ Being; ᢍᢅᡪᠽ Been.

The Compound Perfect Participle is 📆 માં માં Having been.

In Colloquial the Future Participle is WE' or WE' About to be.

#### PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE:

In the Colloquial this is  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  for animates, and  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  for inanimates, the former meaning who is, or was, or which is or was, and the latter which is, or was. It is really used as a kind of adjective.

EXAMPLES:-

দেশে म्राज्य प्राप्त आयम् भी I want a servant who is honest

इत्दि क्रिया व्याप्त स्थापन क्षेत्रा स्ट्रा सिंद ग्री मी क्रिया स्थापन क्षित्र में स्थापन क्षेत्रा स्ट्रा

This horse is a fleet one (one that is fleet).

Your knife is a blunt one.

The Past is similarly constructed. Thus:-

L'A'न्यिन दिन्द्व त्य द्व दिन्दिन स्वापन दे I want the servant who was honest.

The Future may be constructed like the Present. Thus:—
েমে নামনা হাঁ হু মান্ধ নামন ৰ servant who will be honest.

Or thus:—

८.ज. मार्ल्या.स्. २८.स्.चेर.शायर. धुना.

Ditto.

नम्भ।

Or:-

द्राया द्राया क्षेत्र क्षेत्र (or क्षेत्र मृदिः)

Ditto.

म्राज्याचा विमान्योका।

In Literary Tibetan the Present Participle is also  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ 'S' or other variant of the verb  $To\ be$ .

EXAMPLES:-

ট্রিন্ দিন্টের্নি বৃদ্ধিন বৃদ

देवा. यहार्त्य या हे. त. हे. त्य या तथा.

And whatsoever is (that which is) more than this is of the evil one (Matt v. 37).

मार्थः च.र्यायः अष्ट्रचाः गीयः रचटः क्रंटः लूटः स्थाय। रथः य। रथः यः जन्मशः यप्टः

Holy, holy, holy, Lord God, Almighty, which was and which is (Rev. iv. 8).

यद्रा दक्षाच्या

राष्ट्रायराप्रमुरायाप्रवाद्ये । प्राचे ...राष्ट्रासकेसायाप्राप्तवाद्ये ।

I am....which is, and which was, and which is to come.

As the above examples show, the Past construction is similar, the context giving the tense.

The Literary Future for the Periphrastic Participle follows the lines of the Colloquial.

## OTHER LITERARY PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

#### Present.

 $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{T}}^{\mathsf{T}}\widetilde{\mathsf{S}}_{\mathsf{T}}^{\mathsf{T}}$   $\left. \begin{array}{c} \text{Being }; \ as, \ since, \ when, \ after, \ while \ldots is, \ are. \end{array} \right.$ 

অবি মন At the time of being: when, while...is, are.

ઍ5'ર્સ In or by being; if, when . . . is, are.

એંડ્રાં Being.

พีรุ'ฏิฟ Though, since, because...is, are.

พีรุนริษีรรู or รัสร For being.

#### Past.

মির্ব্ধ Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

মিন্না Because, since, when ... was, were; Having been.

অব্নামন After, since, because, when ... was, were.

Ψ5.4 In or by having been; if, when...was, were.

₩5.4.5° Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

## OTHER COLLOQUIAL PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

#### Present.

Ψ5 ਫਿ As, since, because, etc.,...is, are.

પાર્ક In or by being; if, when...is, are.

$$\widetilde{W}_{5}$$
্মন্  $\widetilde{\gamma}_{5}$ ন্ম  $\mathcal{F}_{or\ being}$ .

Past.

মিন্দ্রের Because, since, when, after, as...was, were.

#### SUPINE.

This is formed in Literature by putting the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus, W5-45 To be. Or it may be formed by putting the Root in the same case. Thus \$\widetilde{\mathbb{N}}\bar{\gamma}\dagger^\*\cap To be.

In Colloquial the supines are অস্থি, and অস্থিন

## Verbal Noun.

In Literary Tibetan 3577 To be, is often seen turned into a Gerund, or Verbal Noun, by the addition of the Definite Article रें, or कें, or sometimes both. Thus बेंद्रयदें, बेंद्रयकें, बेंद्रयदें The being.

EXAMPLE:

দার্কী মার্কার্কী স্থান্ত্র Master, it is good for us to be here.

Literally, The being here is good

(Matt. xvii. 4).

The Colloquial Verbal Noun is simply the Infinitive with or without  $\hat{\varsigma}$ .

EXAMPLE:

ন্মন্ত্র। এই দেই ক্রিট্র অব্যা (বি) অন্যা Lord, the being here is good for us.

## § 36. THE VERB 'TO HAVE.'

Like the Latin MIHI EST, or the Russian U MENYA YEST, There is to me, this verb in Tibetan is merely an adaptation of the Substantive Verb 📆 To be, with the subject put in the dative. But whereas, in Latin and Russian, this construction is only an alternative one, in Tibetan it is the only idiom used.

EXAMPLES:-

E'A'W'A'W\\

I have a mother.

८.ज स्य.स.स.

I have not a father.

ब्रॅंड या दाया के करता पेरि

Once I had a gun.

श्राम्याने त्यामुक्षायां क्षेप्रिमा

That country will not have a king.

And so throughout the conjugation.

## PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE.

Examples:-

<u>Ē</u> 5 'A' W 5 '4 4 '5 5 '4' 5 1

The faith which thou hast.

हिंदायार्थेदायपेदायदे द्वाया देवा

The faith which thou hadst.

<u>चित्रयाभेत्कुवित्तर्याते।</u>

The faith which thou wilt have.

ধ্রমের্মি**র**্মার্

He that hath.  $\int (Matt. xxv.$ 

श्रुषासेर्यः दे।

He that hath not. ) 29.)

E-WT-4-7-WE-1

Even that which he hath (ib.).

# § 37. খবিশ To BE.

Like  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$ " this verb is used to express direct affirmation, or, with a negative particle, direct negation, and also to connect any subject with its attribute. It cannot, however, like  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$ , be used to express presence, or existence, or the idea of possession. In other words, though  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$ " may be employed in every case in which  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$  is used, yet  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$ " never takes the place of  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ - $\widetilde{A}$ !

It may be conjugated thus:-

#### PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Affirmative.

The plural being the same as the singular, it is omitted. Honorific construction in Literary Tibetan:—

(Not used).

রি ব্লার্ক বিলার বিলা

Colloquial Negative.

C.Mal. Fl. ye. (or Angarly sig.) I am not good.

हिंदिल्लार्थिके प्रमा, वा सन्दर् Thou art not good.

মিন্দ্রামান্ত্র।
Or occasionally:—
মিন্দ্রামান্ত্রা

He is not good.

মাধ্য is Literary, and both মাধ্য and মাধ্য Colloquial. Whether Literary or Colloquial it is best to use

Interrogative.

८'अम्'र्चे'भेर्द्रस्, or भेर्द्रास्

 $Am\ I\ good\ ?$ 

or **ঐর**হা

हिंदिः अना सिंदिन्तानामः, or दर्मानाम। Art thou good?

मिं अना रें रेन्द्रसः, or नेन्द्रसः,

or 35741

Is he good?

Or occasionally:-मिं अना से दुना नामा, or दुना नामा।

Literary.

C. ロヨヒ. 丸. かんくない

Am I good?

हिर्न्न वार्षेत्रका, or त्र्माम्बा Art thou good?

मिट.घ बट. हा. लुब बका।

Is he good?

N.B.—If and when, in the Colloquial, with the 2nd person, it is generally when a question is being asked. It is hardly ever used in the Colloquial with the 3rd person, though it is not absolutely wrong so to use it.

#### IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Present Indicative, the context generally showing what that tense is. Thus:—

In Literary Tibetan the construction is similar, but of course the Literary forms of the verb must be used.

Another method is similarly to rely on the context for the tense, and to use w5'x'w5' for all persons, or to vary the last syllable according to the rule of the Present Indicative. Thus:—

The Literary form of this construction would be \(\widetilde{\pi}\) \(\widetilde{\pi}\) for all persons, preceded by \(\widetilde{\pi}\), or other indication of tense; and \(\pi\) \(\widetilde{\pi}\) would replace \(\widetilde{\pi}\).

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Imperfect. Thus:-

र्धेन यह अन्य I have, or had, been good.

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

#### FUTURE.

Same as in \(\widetilde{\pi}\superscript{\pi}\sqrt{\pi}\), i.e. expressed by \(\widetilde{\pi}\superscript{\pi}\) for all persons. The Literary construction is:—

८.इ.च्र.विचेर.ट्रा	I shall be a shepherd.
हिर्द्ध वर्ष व्युर दें।	Thou wilt be a shepherd.
क्टि:है:वॅर:५वुर:रॅ।	He will be a shepherd.
८धरःमुरःयःभेदःदे ।	I shall have been
ष्ट्रि <b>रः : धरः</b> मुरःधः ५ तुनाः ने ।	Thou wilt have been
मिट धर मुर ध भेव वे ।	He will have been

When which is used as an auxiliary to other verbs, we shall find that in the Colloquial there is another Future construction, namely, "" for the 1st person, and "" for the 2nd and 3rd persons.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE OR CONDITIONAL.

Same as in  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ', substituting  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ' for  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ' or  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ' wherever they occur, and, in the negative forms,  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ' or  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ' for  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ', in the first part of the sentence, but keeping the second part as it stands there. Thus:—

Present.

ट'र्सुमार्चे प्येद'दाश्चेद'र्चे प्रेट'।

If I be rich, I shall be happy.

Past.

८:युमार्चि:भेदादाक्षेत्रची:भेरि

If I were rich, or had been rich,
I would be or would have been
happy.

The Literary construction is:-

ट.सैब.स्.लूब.व.च.च.च.च.चीर.स्.।

If I am rich I shall be happy.

ट. स्युमा ये . प्येष प्रताम निम्म स्थापन

If I were rich I would be happy.

८. सैबी स्. लुब्द स्टे. यह बीर स. लूर स. लूर स. लूर स.

Had I been rich I would have been happy.

#### POTENTIAL

Same as in  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ 'W, substituting  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  for the  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ' to which  $\S^{5}$ ' is annexed. Thus:—

Present.

ट'अन् र्यो भेत्र प्रुच', or प्रुच'ऑट', । I can be good.

Past.

८लचे संस्थित बैय सालिय।

I could be good.

Perfect.

८.लचे.च्.लुच.च.जूर ।

I could have been good.

Or :—

অনার্থ্যমূব মূব মূরে | (for all persons)

LIKELIHOOD.

The construction is the same as in W5". Thus:-

मिरुमा में प्रेन प्रेन

HORTATIVE.

Same construction as in  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ : changing  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$  into  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ . Thus:—

Present.

८.लमे.च्.लूब्रीश

I must be good.

Past.

८.लचा.च्.लुब.रेच्रूश.वैट.।

I ought to have been good.

PURPOSIVE.

Same as in W5'U', changing W5' into W5' Thus:—

ट्रायर्ब र्यो प्यवस्य दे देवाय।

In order that I may be, or might be, safe.

The Literary construction is in AJTI or WITI or WITI put in the genitive case and followed by

EXAMPLE:—

#### IMPERATIVE.

Literary.

Be good.

Be a man

Colloquially.

As stated under অঁ5'ব।

#### PRECATIVE.

Same construction as in \(\widetilde{\Pi}\)5'\(\pi\), changing \(\widetilde{\Pi}\)5' into \(\widetilde{\Pi}\)5'. Thus:—

Let me be a lama

#### PERMISSIVE

#### OPTATIVE.

Same as in ঊ্ব'ম', changing ঊ্ব' into ঊ্ব' Thus:—

েহম্ম্বামিঅব (ম') ব্না Would I were rich.

#### Literary.

# ८. सैंबो. सू. मुर्थ ।

Would I were rich.

#### INFINITIVE.

ખેડ્ય To be. In Literary Tibetan it is the same.

ळ्र-धन्त्रम् ।

To have been.

ल्रा.स्ये. (or ल्रा.सी.) लृथःय।

To be about to be (Coll.).

भूषःतरःप्रचीरःच ।

ल्ला (or ल्ला में) लुबना

To be about to be (Lit.).

Examples:—

रभ्रात्रीमात्रसक्षिक्यां भ्रा

Now, consider (see) how great this man was (to be).

In Literary Tibetan: --

५. भ्र. ५५. इ. १ क्ष. कुब. म्य. १ के स

Ditto.

প্ৰা

प्रस्तित्व स्थानसम्बद्धः । स्थान्ति स्थानि स

This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is (to be) a sinner. (Luke vii. 39.)

यः भेदायः येशः ह्या । यः भेदायः येशः ह्या । I know that his commandment is (to be) life eternal.

<u> हिं</u>द. गुेश्रऱटः श्रु. लुब.च. चश्रम ।

Or, in Literary Tibetan:-

हिन्गीसन्दर्सुणिक्यरायसम्ब

Who thinkest thou that thou art, or thyself to be?

### PARTICIPLES.

र्षेद्रयः Being PRESENT:

लेद:दा Been PAST:

অবিমান Having been { (both in Coll. and COMPOUND PERFECT:

Lit.).

FUTURE:

About to be

### PERIPHRASTIC.

Both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, Present and Past Tenses, this is:

भैक्प, or भैक्पारी

Who or which am, is or was.

EXAMPLES.—

क्ष्मास्येष्यादे वरावराद्यार।

A remnant (that which is a remnant) shall be saved. (Rom. ix. 27.)

मिँद्ररदामी धिक्या देश विकासीमा।

Take that which is thine own. (Matt. xxv. 25.)

र. ट. राउ. जे. ब्रिटे. क्षश्च. ग्री. क्षर. लूटे. रायु. **५श**.शु.५स५.च.लुक्.स.५८.। ८.सुर. यदे रश्राशु हिंद शु र्खेनश शु र्श्वेतशयः उदाधिदारा दे रहा मेशा

Now, I, Paul, myself, who in your presence am lowly among you, but being absent am of good courage toward you. (2 Cor. x.

I speak to you that are gentiles. (Rom. xi. 13.)

द्वे त्वद्शं संयोद्गयाने वाद्वे व्वद्श ५८ महेश या अ और या दे या महेश या

I will call them my people which were not my people; and her my beloved which was not beloved. (Rom. ix. 25.)

बेर:बर:५मुर |

The Future Periphrastic Participle both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, follows the lines of めらない

## OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.			
LITERARY.	Present.		
ખે <b>ત</b> ે. ખેતુ. લેંદ	Being; as, since, when, after, while am, is, are.		
	) •		
ত্মৰ ঘট্ট ক্ল'ম	At the time of being; when, while am, is, are.		
श्रेष्यदे 'रुष'तः			
ध्येव-व-	In or by being; If, when am, is, are.		
त्र्रेब.ज.	Being.  Though, since, because am, is, are.  Of or for being.		
মীর-শ্রীহা			
শ্ব-মন্থ-			
Past.			
योज ने	·)		
থের <b>'ব্য</b>	Having been; As, since, when, after was, were.		
শূৰ-বাশ্ব-	Because, since, when was, were; Having been.		
ଲ୍ୟ.ସ. <b>ଜ୍ୟ.</b>			
พั <b>ส</b> -य- <b>५</b> ८:	As, when was, were.		
प्रेब-ब-	In or by being; If, when was, were.		
COLLOQUIAL.	Present.		
<b>শ্বি</b> -সূক্ষ	At the time of being; When, while am, is, are.		
শব্দর বুল কাল	are.		
र्दर', or ध्येष:र्दर	Being; because, since, as, when am, is, are.		
ध्येद द	In or by being; If, when am, is, are.		
लूब.राष्ट्र.	Of or for being.		

Being.

### Past.

ত্তিব বাহা Because, since, when, after, as . . . was, were; having been.

র্মান্ত Having been; as, since, when, after . . . was, were.

ত্মব্যার Of or for having been.

মির'ম'মম' As, since, when, after . . . was, were.

শীর'হা'হ্

মির'র' In or by having been; If, when . . . was, were.

# Supine.

Literary: ਘੋਰਪਨ, and ਘੋਰ੍ਹ To be.

Colloquial: এইন, and এইন্ট্র To be.

## Verbal Noun.

Either  $\nabla \vec{\beta} = Being$ , To be, or the Infinitive of the verb, which in itself includes the idea of To be. It may either be used alone, or, in the Colloquial, with  $\vec{\beta}$ , or in Literary Tibetan  $\vec{\beta}$ , or  $\vec{\beta}$ , or  $\vec{\beta}$ 

### EXAMPLES:-

ক্রুমে'র্ট' ন্বিশাশ্রির'ম' (বি') মর্ক্সম' Sometimes it is not very pleasant to be a king.
মর্ক্সম'র-ডেম্বের্টিম'রিব |

スロコロ (子) ごまごうし It is shameful to be drunk.

3 महरू र र में ह्विर र्वेड र र मिल्रिया दिं It suffices for the disciple that he be as (to be as) his master, and the servant as his lord.

(दें) ब्राट में दिन्या

N.B.—It must always be remembered that ATT is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

# § 38. THE VERB.

I.—Preliminary. The Tibetan Verb denotes only a sort of indefinite happening or state, and this not of itself, but rather by means of certain auxiliaries, including the verb To be, which alone really constitutes the verb in a Tibetan sentence. Thus:—

र्शेन् मुन स्नाम मुक्त स्थान मुन्त पुन्त ।

Or बिट पश्च (or स्वाम निवास मुन्त निवास क्षाम क्षाम

Literally, this is: By the sower, as regards the seed, a sowing is.

In fact the so-called Verb is rather a kind of Noun, modified in its significations by the verb To be, according to the mood or tense of the latter. It possesses in itself no means whereby to distinguish between the active and passive voices; the singular and plural numbers are alike in construction; and, except as regards the auxiliary To be, all its forms can be used with any of the persons indiscriminately.

The changes or inflections undergone by the Tibetan Verb are effected in three ways:—

- 1. By structural alterations in the Root;
- By making use of Auxiliary Verbs;
- 3. By resorting to divers monosyllabic *Particles* for the formation of Infinitives, Participles, Supines, etc.

### II.—Roots.

These in Literary Tibetan are four:—1. Present; 2. Perfect; 3. Future; and 4. Imperative.

#### Thus:--

35'5' To do, To make, To act.

Present Root: 35 Do, Does, Doing.

Perfect Root: 5N' Have or has done.

Future Root: 5' Will do.

Imperative Root: 38 Do.

However, every Tibetan Verb does not possess all four roots. Some only possess three. Thus:—

ব্রহিন্'ম' To drop, drip, trickle, leak.

Present Root: QET Drop, Drops, Dropping.

Perfect Root: नाइनाहा, or जानाहा Have or has dropped.

Future Root: न्यान Will drop.

Some possess only two roots. Thus:-

ন্ বূল To go, To walk.

Present and Future Root:  $q\overline{q}$  Goes, Will go.

Perfect and Imperative Root: NT Have or has gone, Go.

A Colloquial Imperative is ক্রুনা Go.

Many possess only one root for all tenses. Thus:-

মর্থীন'না To see.

দার্ভ্রান To remember.

সুব'ম' To be able.

র্মিন্

ব্দ্নাম To suit, to agree, to be satisfied.

Where, in Literary Tibetan, a verb possesses a special root for each or any of the different tenses, and for the Imperative Mood, that special root must be used for those tenses and that mood, save that when the Future construction is in AJK or JG or J, the Present Root is retained instead of the Future Root. Where there is no special Future root or Imperative root, the Present root is used for the Future and Imperative. It is impossible, of course, to learn the root-forms of all the verbs, but there is no reason why those of the commoner verbs should not be memorized to some extent.

As regards the Colloquial, though it is quite allowable to use the

roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses, yet it is said that as a matter of fact, at least in vulgar Colloquial, this is seldom or never done, and the root generally used is the Perfect root. When, however, the Present root of a verb ends in an inherent W (for instance, To look), or in an inherent Q (e.g., To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g., To request, ask), or in (e.g., To live, feed, nourish), it is said that that Present root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in TWA, or TYT, the Present Farticiple, Active Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. If, in these verbs, the Future is formed with WT instead of TWA etc., the Perfect root (or perhaps more correctly the Future Root) must be used. Thus:—

The above idea that the Perfect Root should be used in the Colloquial probably arises from the fact that it sometimes has the same sound as the Future root. For instance, in the verb \$\\ \begin{align\*}
\begin{align\*}
\text{To send}, the \\
\text{Perfect Root } \begin{align\*}
\begin{align\*}
\text{To send}, the \\
\text{Perfect Root } \begin{align\*}
\begin{align\*}
\text{To send}, the \\
\text{Perfect Root } \begin{align\*}
\begin{align\*}
\text{To send}, the \\
\text{Perfect Root } \text{To send}, the \\
\tex

Of course it must be remembered that the Colloquial, as such, pays no regard to spelling, but only to its own phonetics. Hence, if one

writes Tibetan, one should spell properly. Therefore, also, if one attempts to write Colloquial, as such, it must always look wrong, as regards spelling.

In Compound Honorific verbs the first retains the Present root throughout, e.g., ত্বান্ত্ৰ To provide.

EXAMPLE:-

With all other verbs the vulgar Colloquial, it is said, usually adopts the Perfect root, if any, or at least the sound of it, as above explained for all moods and tenses. Thus, for \$\square\$155.5 To send, let go, dismiss, the roots are:—

Present Root: 555 Send, Sends, Sending.

Perfect Root: 755 Have or has sent.

Future Root: \$\Pi\5\tau\cdot\$. Will send.

Imperative Root:  $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$  $\Gamma$  Send.

In Literary Tibetan the Present Indicative is :-

But in the vulgar Colloquial it is:— 도착'지5다', or 되5다' I send, and 도착'지5다' (or 되5다') 회교 기계 I am sending.

In Literary Tibetan the Future Indicative is expressible in several ways with different roots. Thus:—

दशःमोर्ट्रिमो प्ये**द।** 

There seems also to be an emphatic form in which W is affixed to the Future root, and is followed by 35 for all persons. Thus:—

I shall send; I am to send, i.e., by me a sending is to be.

So, in Literary Tibetan the Present Participle is  $\sqrt{5}$  Sending; the Active Participle  $\sqrt{5}$  Sending; or  $\sqrt{5}$  or  $\sqrt{5}$  He who, or It that, sends; the Terminative Infinitive  $\sqrt{5}$  To send; and the Supine  $\sqrt{5}$  For sending, etc.; but in Colloquial the Present Participle is  $\sqrt{5}$  the Active Participle  $\sqrt{5}$  Samples, or  $\sqrt{5}$  the Infinitive  $\sqrt{5}$  and the Verbal Noun or Gerund and Supine  $\sqrt{5}$  the Infinitive  $\sqrt{5}$  or  $\sqrt{5}$  or  $\sqrt{5}$  The Literary Imperative is  $\sqrt{5}$ , or  $\sqrt{5}$  but the Colloquial is  $\sqrt{5}$ , or  $\sqrt{5}$  would be understood quite well. Vulgar Colloquial would be  $\sqrt{5}$ 

# III.—AUXILIARY VERBS.

These are  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ , and other forms of the verb To be, which it is not necessary to specify here;  $5^{\circ}$ ,  $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ ,

and AJEA To become, To happen, To take place, To occur; AZAT To be finished, completed, terminated; AJAT To be made ready, finished, accomplished; AJAT To be ended, concluded, exhausted; AJAT and AJAT To be able; AJAT To go, but used idiomatically; AJAT and JAT To be necessary, or expedient or expressive of the idea of obligation or duty; AJAT To allow, suffer, permit; AJAT To be allowed or permitted; JAT To make, do, act, perform; AJAT and AJAT elegant and respectful forms of JAT; WAT To or ALT To come, but used idiomatically; AJAT, WATAT, WATAT To be possible, probable, likely, etc., etc.

## IV .- AUXILIARY PARTICLES.

(1)— $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$  annexed to the Verbal Root according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root (see § 25, iv). Used to connect the root with  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{N}$ , or  $\mathfrak{R}$ , they form a periphrastical Present Tense. For example, in the Colloquial, which loosely uses the sound of the Perfect Root—

 $LN'A5L' \mid I send.$ 

But:-

মে'ব্যুম্'ন্' I am sending, or I send.

Sometimes, in the vulgar Colloquial, they are annexed to the roots of adjectives, taking the place of the adjectival particle  $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ ,  $\mathfrak{A}$ , or  $\mathfrak{A}$ . Thus:—

यमणा स्वाणि रेंद्र instead of यमणा स्वायि रिंद्र The road is rough. यमणा माने रेंद्र instead of यमणा स्वायि रेंद्र The child is good.

It is better, however, to use the adjective in full, and not to employ the construction in  $\mathfrak{N}$ ,  $\mathfrak{J}$  etc.

These Particles are sometimes used at the end of a sentence in the sense of a finite verb, and more particularly in the 1st Person Future.

EXAMPLES:-

মেনেরুশ্শী | I shall put in.

दशःरेंग्शः नेर्रःणैं, or नुःषे। I shall help.

(2)— TN, TN, TN, WN These are annexed to the root as Gerunds, and signify By (doing something), or Because, Since, etc., but more usually antithetically as But, Though.

EXAMPLES:-

It may even be annexed to the root of the verb To be. Thus:—

মাঁ কুমামান্ম্বামান্ বিশ্বামান্ত বিশ্বা

When used antithetically a pleonastic देन गुद्द sometimes follows —:

মিনিন্ম নেম নহান শূকা বিৰু শুন নহান Though he slay me, yet will I trust in him.

When annexed to the root of an adjective it includes the verb To be. Thus:—

ম্নার্নাম নার দ্বীম = ম্নার্নাম Since, Because, or Though (she was, or is) of fine stature.

(3)—गैंद, गुँद, and भैंद। Annexed to the root. These are Literary forms, and denote the Participle Present.

EXAMPLES:

मिट क्रिन प्रमाप्त देवस गुनि सुन पर्ते । He went on his way praying.

Used to connect the root with  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{T}}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{T}}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathsf{Q}}_{\mathsf{T}}$ , or  $\widehat{\mathsf{T}}_{\mathsf{T}}$  they form a periphrastical Present Tense, just as  $\widehat{\mathsf{T}}_{\mathsf{T}}$ ,  $\widehat{\mathsf{T}}_{\mathsf{T}}$ , etc., do in the Colloquial.

Examples:—

गुः कें प्रदानीक व्या

Lo, I come (am coming). (Heb. x.7.)

मिट्स्यु ये व मीव य पुना

He is singing.

When connecting the root with 55 Together with, they are often used gerundially.

EXAMPLES:-

मोर्नेट मीकर्

In, when, or while sending.

ह्यु त्येव मुक्त ५८ ।

In, etc., singing.

**बेद**'ग्रैब'द्र ।

In, etc., doing.

दर्ने धेरदर

In, etc., going.

Thus:--

দ্মা নৌর দ্রীর দে মে মে ব্রম ক্রি দ্র্যান বি মেদা In, or when, singing it is best to stand up.

In the Colloquial this may be rendered:—

(4).—5 after final 5

5 after final 4, 5, A, N

ই after final সা, দ', ম', ম' and all vowels.

These are a sort of Continuative Particles or Suspensives, and may be annexed to all Present and Perfect roots, but according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root. Annexed to Present roots they form a Present Participle, or Gerund, and, annexed to Perfect roots, a Past Participle, or Gerund. Thus, they may be rendered.... ing, or... ing been, or...ing...ed, or As, when, after, etc. They are Literary rather than Colloquial, though not altogether absent from the latter, and are largely met with in those subordinate clauses a longer or shorter string of which generally goes to the construction of a Tibetan sentence.

EXAMPLES:-

ये त्या हे प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्

Pilate and Herod were formerly (formerly having been) at enmity with each other. (Luke (xxiii, 12.)

ने व्या चिंद मीश शे केंनाश इसश मोजेनाश है।

And seeing the multitudes he, etc. (Matt. v. 1.)

देशश्चर्युट्यः स्त्रं ते . देशः श्वः के । विश्वरास्त्रं ते तिनीयः देशः श्वः के स्वयंशः

And when even was come his disciples went (having gone) down to the sea, etc. (John vi. 16.)

(5)— 3C after final T, 5, T, or the vowel K

At after final to, to, to, to, and all vowels except to

This Suspensive, which is Literary rather than Colloquial, is annexed to the Root, and expresses in one or other of its forms the Present Participle, but sometimes also the Past Participle. It is also sometimes used instead of the conjunction And. Lastly, it often expresses a causal relationship. It is generally met with at the end of minor interpolations within subordinate clauses.

EXAMPLES:-

মন্ত্রীনামান্ত্র বেন্ত্রীন্দের ব্যান্তর (By) Marching quickly the army arrived.

हे.बंब.लु.चे.चूंट.हिर.दटलीय.क्.पीय.टे.बी.

पहमाश भेट पर्वे रे

वेरिसेरिडेट कुट सेर्।

अत्राबिद्या मेरित्रु प्रमेरित

প্রন'মান্ত্র' (perfect of এট্রই'ম')

(6)— 디자 and 디자

And Jesus went (having gone) about all the cities and villages. (Matt. ix. 35.)

Being afraid and calling out.

Light not being, air is not; or Light is not and air is not; or Light and air not being; or Without light or air. (Das.)

Lying down, to go to sleep; or To lie down and go to sleep.

The heavens having parted, or rent asunder. (Mark i. 10.)

These are merely the particles  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$  and  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$  of the Infinitive, or simple Participle, put in the Instrumental or Modal case. Practically they are equivalent to  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$ ,  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$ , and  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$  and the next noted Suspensive  $\mathbf{A}^{\bullet}$ . They are often used as a variant of these, when the latter have already occurred in the same sentence. This is merely a matter of taste, to avoid repetition. Primarily they mean Because, Since, Seeing that, etc., but they also carry the sense of When, and of the Participle, both Present and Past. Both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan make use of them:—

EXAMPLES:-

८.४८.च्रीश.चर्डश.तश्र

न्वेदर्नु रगाद यः फेदर्यस्।

ट.लूब.तश.भ.पह्नाश.चुना।

বৃষ্ণ র্মার্য ন্মী ন্ধ্রীনার্ম্য হ্রব্য নার ব্রব্য নী ন্ধ্রীনার্ম্য হ্রব্য নার ব্রব্য নার ব্রব্য

When I looked; i.e., I having looked.

As, since, because it is very difficult; or It being very difficult.

Since it is I, or It being I, or It is I, be not afraid. (Matt. xiv. 27.)

Then Simon's mother-in-law having been seized by a fever-illness and having lain down. (Mark i. 30.) ন্দ্রিণ্ট্রম। মর্সমেস্মিন্দ্রিমান্ত্রমান্ত Now, since (or because) ye say, we see. (John ix. 41).

Examples:—

प्रिं केंगा शुप्ते विश्वास्य क्षा हिंदा मिटा या ता शुप्ते विश्वास्य क्षा हिंदा मिटा या ता मिंटा मीश दे देनाता। दि श्राप्त हिंदा

He to them, my mother and my brother who is? Thus having said. (Matt. xii. 48, and elsewhere).

When your work is finished you may go home.

र्मेश। विर्-(ब्रेचोश्व-मोर्ट-।य-जना-यञ्चश-ब्रह्म-

After eating (having eaten) chhoti hāzirī you must set out.

ह्यतः त्यादि स्वादितः प्येतः तस्य । स्रवः त्यादः हें हें स्वीदः त्यः प्येदः तस्य ।

I have been (having been) young.

I was formerly (having formerly been) in Darjeeling.

Annexed thus to the Verbal Root, and followed by  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$  or  $\mathsf{A59}$ , it indicates either the Pluperfect (active), or the Perfect (passive). Thus:—

ध्नानीश-नुः भागवास दशार्थेन, or त्रुना व

The tiger had eaten the deer.

मृत्यःव अशास्त्रः, or तरुमा

The deer has been eaten.

ट्रायट्रायायायुक्तक्सार्येद्

I had gone home.

ে (ম') ইম'ৰ্ম'র্ম'র্ম

I had been asked.

र्ज्नाः <del>ब</del>्रीयः वटः वः दर्दे स्क्रीरः द्वीशः वशः दर्गा।

In the roll-book it is (has been) written of me. (Heb. x. 7).

(8)—AN. This particle has (perhaps) sometimes a Present but more often a Past signification, and is always found attached to the simple Participle in  $\mathfrak{A}$  or  $\mathfrak{A}$ . It means From; or  $When \ldots ed$ ;

or Being...ed; or Having been: or As or While, followed by a Past tense; or As or While, followed by a Present Participle (in which case the root of the verb is often repeated, the particle \(\mathbb{I}\) or \(\mathbb{T}\) coming next, and then the \(\mathbb{N}\); or When on the point of; When about to; When going to; Being about to, or on the point of, when used with \(\mathbb{N}\) or \(\mathbb{N}\) about \(\mathbb{N}\).

EXAMPLES:--

दे.देवी.वीश.चिंट.ज.लट.वश.लट.दे.चयोठ.

रे.वश्रामिट.तर.स्वयश.रा.जश

ट्रे. बेश. जि.सूट. बेश. लीज. ट्रेट्र. व्रिश. चर्चा.

देव्यायम्। कृष्यायम्।

प्रिट.म्रीक्ष.र.१८८.ययोठ.म्रीक्षरक्ष.रा.जन्ना

रे'नमार्शेट'य'यस।

ॐ.च**४श.⁴श्वश.**मीटःशूट.च.जश।

रेते कें भे मुक्रिय बिट या भेर या यहा

लट.ट्रे.ट्रच.च्रीश.हे.तश्हे.तश्हे.व.ज.प.च2ट.च.

त्मुं तःत्रस्। मार्कृशः त्रासः नुः बिनाशः दशः तीजः बुनाः नुः नुषुः हृशः शुः कुः मधिशः दश्यशः ग्रीः दिः दशः When they continued asking, i.e., again and again asked, him. (John viii. 7).

Thereupon as he passed by. (John ix. 1).

And he, having gone, and having associated with a householder of that country, after having settled. (Luke xv. 15).

Then Jesus, having begun again to teach by the seaside. (Mark iv. 1).

And while he yet spake. (Matt. xxvi. 47).

When they were going (As they went). (Matt. xxviii, 11).

And the disciples as they went. (Mark ii. 23).

There shall two men be in the field, i.e. while being. (Matt. xxiv. 40).

And they stoned Stephen; or As or while they stoned, or were stoning Stephen. (Acts vii. 59).

After that, two of his disciples, having set out on a journey, as they were going to a country. (Mark xvi. 12).

**अट.टे.टेचोलश.ज.शूट.शूट.च.जश** 

लट. टु. ट्या. टु. केर. चारक्ष. चुर. कुट. चारुचा.

प्राप्तका (Present root) दात्पका । नेत्रिक्षः प्राप्तका र स्ट्राम् प्रकृति । नेत्रिक्षः प्राप्तका ।

\_\_\_\_

And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the Lord's disciples. (Acts ix. 1).

And as they went on their way.

And while they, thus conversing, questioned each other. (Acts

(Acts viii, 36).

xxiv. 15).

चतुः भुः क्याय चुराय मुः स्पर् ।

ロダイ・エン・山田が、「こ、マダー」

And when Paul was now about to open his mouth. (Acts xviii. 14).

And should have been killed, i.e., being about to be, or on the point of being killed. (Acts xxiii. 27).

(9)—5. This is expressive of condition, hypothesis, contingency and even doubt, and may be rendered by If, When, On, Since, As, Should, Had, Were, etc. It is generally added to the Root, but sometimes (though not often) to the Infinitive, and is much used at the end of verbal phrases both in the Colloquial and in the written language. Sometimes the phrase which it concludes is introduced by the expression TAT, but the subjunctive idea is in no way affected even if this expression be omitted.

Examples of its use with the Root are given under  $\sqrt[3]{35}$ , and  $\sqrt[3]{37}$  (§ 37).

5 is also used in Literary Tibetan, adversatively, to express Though, Although. Thus:—

It also expresses the idea of Reason for, or Causality. Thus:—

35. W5. 4.45. Jan. |

Since this existed, that arose. (Das.)

भ्र.ल्र.४.२.४.वैर.।

দেশেষার্গ্রদেশ দুশি সংক্রিয়।

Since fire existed, smoke arose. (Das.)

(On) seeing me the thief fled.

Used with 551' it expresses When, or If and when. Thus:—

क्सरायम् व

क्स.रेश.ज.पंचव.थ।

If and when, or when, I go. (Das.)

If and when, or when the time comes, i.e., it comes down to the time. (Das.)

(10)—A. Annexed to the Participle, this Suspensive may mean To, At, In; With respect, regard, or reference to; Concerning; Relative to; In consequence of.

EXAMPLES:-

मार्शेर्'यात्मार्मात् व।

र्ह्मेनाराजात्र्राह्माय।

To rejoice in killing. (Jäschke.)

To shrink from, or be afraid of (i.e., with respect to) sinning. (Das.)

Annexed to the Root, it may be used for the Present Participle in a minor phrase, much like 35° and its variants. Thus:—

ব্দা এইব সূত্র প্রতি থে ২০ দী বদ্ধ তি Denying himself and taking up his cross.

It is also often used like  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ ,  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ ,  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ , but annexed to the Participle, and meaning As.

EXAMPLES:--

झ हेब लिया स्पर्म याया

As there is (was) an idol shrine.
(Das.)

मुल र्शे केर रे मिल्र रे रेर मिल्र वेररे.

As the king goes there daily to bathe.

**८**हेना-देव-मी-वट-व-क्षे-विट-च-व्या

As it does not occur in the world. (Jäschke.)

Annexed to the Root, it is used adversatively for Though, Although.

EXAMPLE:-

Though looking, he did not see.

Annexed to the Repeated Root, it expresses While, Whilst.

EXAMPLE:-

다시 독리 조 역 국 개체 대 ( 테트' ) 글로' Whilst I am reading this book note down what I say.

When annexed to adjectives,  $\mathcal{A}'$  includes the idea of the verb  $To\ be$ , being indeed an abbreviation of  $\mathcal{A}'\mathcal{A}'\mathcal{A}'$  Being, and seems to have the force of And, or But, according to circumstances.

EXAMPLES:-

सुर्दिष्टि श्रु श्रीरायारेटाच ।

अश्रक्षा कृता कृतः **मृ**तः ता नुवास कृतः या

Hair and beard being yellow and long. (Das.)

Being ugly as to his body and of small stature and (or but) having a fine voice. (Das.)

भ्रम्बनायाष्ट्रमान्द्रा

र्येचस.जुर्माश.चुर.के.य.संमाजाशह्स.त।

Being ugly and short. (Jäschke.)

Being of good figure, nice to look at, and pretty.

In double Imperative or Precative expressions, A has the force of the Present Participle, or of And, and is annexed to the root of the first verb.

Examples:—

पूर्वा या झूँश क्षेत्रा भी ग

५.जूट.पा.क्षेत्र.जूचा। २.जॅ.पाटश.पा.पट्ट.२.जूचा।

श्रूट.ज.क्रुंश.चीना

यैंग.ज.र्जेश

Come and see (coming, see).

Now, rise and come hither (rising, come hither).

Go and look (going, look).

In sentences like the following, where our Supine means In order to, or For the purpose of, A, annexed to the verbal Root, is used Supinally both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial.

EXAMPLES:-

(11)—**ភ្ញុំ** 

When connecting a verbal root with the auxiliary verb  $\sqrt[3]{5}$ , or  $\sqrt[3]{5}$ , this particle forms, in modern Literary Tibetan, a Future tense which is practically a kind of periphrastic conjugation of  $\sqrt[3]{5}$  (as a Future Participle, About to . . . . ) with the auxiliary verb.

EXAMPLES:-

द:र्वेद:क्रु:थेव। ≃-----

 $I \ shall \ come$ ;  $I \ am \ about \ to \ come$ .

मिट्ट माश्चर कु स रे र ।

He will not speak; He is not about to speak.

It is also used in older Literary Tibetan to express necessity, obligation, expediency.

EXAMPLES:-

ट.प्ट.मैं.लुब.बेश।

Am I to come? Must I come?

मिट्ट मीश हा ता हु दा कु शिव।

He ought not to beat the horse.

८.७.५मुं.मैं.श्रट्सं.लूर्।

I have many things to write.

In the Colloquial \$\overline{\pi}\$, annexed to the verbal Root, is extensively used for the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES:-

८ दे उत्त्रों कु मे वदेंदा

I do not wish to go there.

मिट सञ्जीय सामान में मुं मार्कें राजिर।

How far have we to walk to reach home?

हर्निः महास्त्रम् कुः स्त्रा स्राध्याकुः स्त्रात्रम् । स्राध्याकुः स्त्रात्रम् । स्राध्याकुः स्त्रात्रम् । स्राध्याकुः स्त्रात्रम् । स्राध्याक्षेत्रम् । स्राध्याक्षेत्रम् ।

What have you to say?

There is nothing at all to say.

Be pleased to rise.

Is there any sport (game) to be got here?

I do not wish to be there.

# (12)— ٣٠٠٠٩٤ (١٠)

In the Colloquial this particle, with or without the  $\mathbf{Q}_{\mathbf{S}}$ , is also extensively used, annexed to the Verbal Root, to express what correspond to our Verbal Nouns in *ing*, i.e. the Latin Gerund.

EXAMPLES:—

द्यान्त्रात्त्रित्। व्यक्तान्त्रित्। व्यक्तान्त्रित्।

It is very confusing to read the Literary language: The reading of the Literary language, etc.

नुस्रायान्त्रनुत्रायः (त्रिः) नुःस्टाद्यसः देरा

It is very wrong to tell lies: The telling lies, etc.

त्तुः व मिक्र या स्रायः व त्र द्वीट : प्यते : पुरु : दे ।

The second month (March) is the time for selling (of selling) shares.

भे भट यें भूर विर अठर यें परे भ्रेंग र्नेश्ये रेंग्रंन्य स्टर्ग

Few people need learn this extraordinary language; There is no meaning of many people having to learn this, etc.

# (13)—55

Both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial this enclitic, used after the Infinitive or Participle in  $\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$  or  $\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$ , may be rendered As, When (carrying a Past signification), and it also has the force of the Past Participle.

EXAMPLES:-

लट्ट्याप्टर्ड्ड्रि.च.र्ट्ड्यूट्टर्ट्टर्।

And the Word became (having become) flesh. (John i. 14).

सः सरः लः भ्रुतः मुः वुरः स्रेरः हेनाः हः तोतः तः सः सरः लः भ्रुतः मुः वुरः स्रेरः हेनाः हः तोतः तः

म्निर-इसशागुश-दमःसामन-सुश-य-५८: । मुन्-समर-मान-प्रेर-समान-सुश-य-५८: ।

शर्वेट:घर:प्रमुर:र्रे।

रे.चंश.क्ष.तंत्र.क्षेश.पा.जू.चिश्वश.सर्वेश.त्. जूर.त.रेट.।

दे.यश्चाबिचालाकटाश्चरे.क्ट.स्टरा इत्ताक्ष्येय.च.स्टरा There cometh a woman of Samaria (a woman of Samaria having come) to draw water. (John iv. 7).

In the beginning was the Word (the Word having been). (John i. 1).

Ye shall see the heavens opened, and, etc. (The heavens having opened, ye shall see, etc.). (John i. 51).

Then, in the calculator's computations the year omens having been harmonious.

When he has arrived (He having arrived) at the house of the family.

When about a year had elapsed.

When at last the wedding was over.

As the big bell was tolled.

In Literary Tibetan, especially in Western Tibet, 5% is often used gerundially with the Present Participle in 5%, 5%, etc., and means In, When, While, etc.

EXAMPLE:

म्नु भेर ने प्रत्या का क्षेत्र प्रत्य का क्षेत्र प्रत्य प्रत्य

In Literary Tibetan, and especially of late in the Colloquial, it is used as a familiar form of the Imperative, and implies advice, exhortation and entreaty.

EXAMPLES:

 (14)—5 after E', 5', 4', N', N', A'

र् after म, यः, **र**:र्मा

5. after vowels.

মু after ম

after anything.

These particles, as Verbal Auxiliaries, are extensively used in Literary Tibetan to express the Infinitive Future and the Supine. They are seldom, if at all, used in the Colloquial, save by those who affect Literary forms.

### EXAMPLES:-

पहेंची.तर.पंचीर.रू.। श्रीमीज्ञत्तर्भवात्त्रःश्र्ची.ची.चीराजशा अ.री.

द्वे.मि.म.ब्रूट.टे.पद्देबी.तर.पवीर.ट्रा शिक्षेण य.टे.ज. दश.ट. रट. रट. श्वेश.टे.

द्रमश्चार्यम् । ५ वित्र केट देवे स्युम् रह्म । देवा क्षेत्र दे . ५ वित्र केट . देवे . स्युम् . रह्म .

त्तर्रत्यर वश्चिमा वश्चिमा व्यक्ति वर क्षेत्र वर क्षेत्र वर क्षेत्र वर क्षेत्र वर्षेत्र वर्षेत्य वर्षेत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्षेत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्

हिर्-क्रुस-नु-विन्यस-स्क्रि-वर-हिर-नु-क्रिस-नु-वर-क्रिस-स्क्रिस-सिन्।

तृब्गुटादवे माथस सम्मार्थे प्राह्मेर् नहुमाया वे दिवे सम्मार्थे समार्थे सम्मार्थे सम्मार्थे समार्थे स To him that overcometh will I give TO EAT of the tree of life. (Rev. ii. 7).

To him that overcometh will I grant to SIT with me in my throng. (Rev. iii. 21).

Who is worthy to open (opening) the book and TO LOOSE the seals thereof? (Rev. v. 2).

And to them it was given that they should not kill them (not TO KILL them) but that they should be tormented (but TO BE TORMENTED) five months. (Rev. ix. 5).

See that he BE with you without fear. (1 Cor. xvi. 10).

But TO SIT on my right hand or on my left hand is not mine to give. (Mark x. 40). WC দার্ভিন বি দার্মদা নি মি Ara কি মার্মির বি And the Lord's servant being apt ত Teach. (2 Tim. ii. 24).

लयः परेवश्र शे.पहिंचा तर पंचेर हूं। इ.ट्रे.ज. ये. शशः हिंदे. ज. देन्ये व. ज.सूर्य.

The Lama will allow you to OFFER prayers to-morrow in the monastery.

रेन्नामीक्षामिट अनिसरीना र् प्रतिमार्थित। They have allowed him to BUILD the house.

The last of these particles, namely Q, is not much used in this connection in Literary Tibetan. It may, however, be so used instead of any of the others.

EXAMPLE :-

ट.के.ज.ठ में ट्रा

I go to see.

(15)— The and The force of the Present Participle, and, with the added, may be used as an adjective; while The serves as a Gerund, meaning As, While, or Whilst, and also Though, and Because, or Since, according to circumstances.

EXAMPLES :-

८.पर्चे.चबुब.सकुश।

I am going. (Elegant form).

दाव्या क्रमाश प्रविद प्रदेश स्था स्था प्राप्त । He glanced at me with a loving look.

र्में में स्थार की कार्या के स्थार की स

As the Lamas entered the monastery (while entering the monastery) they chanted hymns.

मिट यामिश्याह स्पूर्य विवर्त सामित्र विवर्श

Though he had tea he did not drink.

कट, मूट्र, मी, क्रूब, री, लूट्र, चढ़्ब, री.

Since the beer was in front of him he drank.

(16)— おに.

This is a Colloquial Suspensive. Added to the verbal Root, it means As, Since, Because, and implies either Present or Past.

EXAMPLES:-

দ্রি-শীধান্ম ক্রান্তে তেওঁ নির্মান দ্রী As you have sent the book, I will read it

(17)— 5 and 5 & A |

These also are much used Colloquially. Annexed to the verbal Root 550 acts as a Gerund, meaning As, When, While, At the time of, etc.

Examples:—

ট্রি-শী্ষাম্মী-বুষ-দান-প্রিমান (বি) বি When writing take care what you say.

मि वृद्-तुश्नाम केना केना नुश्नाय नेत्। As he went off, he smiled.

5872 has the same meaning, but is annexed to the simple Infinitive, or Participial form of the verb, put into the genitive case.

Examples:—

ট্রি-শূম-এব্র-এবি-বৃধ্ব-ম-রি-ম- (ন') বি When writing take care what you say.

मिं त्र्रेन पते नुसाया मि केना केना नुसाय As he went off, he smiled.

A Literary equivalent of 5시기 is 준지

A.—Infinitive Mood.

The Infinitive, both in Literature and in the Colloquial, is the simple form of the verb as given in dictionaries, i.e. the Root, with  $\nabla$  or  $\nabla$ 

annexed, according to the rule regarding the final letter of the root. It is the same as the Participial form, and also as the form of the verb regarded as a substantive. Thus \$5.57 may mean To do, or Doing, or A, or the, doing.

Each root can be regarded as the basis of a special Infinitive.

Thus:—

Present:	मिर्निट:यः	To send.	
Perfect:	מקבים		
	<u> </u>	To have sent.	
	ব5८.च.लूब.त.		
	<b>ब</b> र्ड्, लूर. च.		
Future :	מוקרים		
	मिर्ट मैं लुबे त		
	मानदःम्रें ॲन्यः	To be about to send, or To be sent.	
	नोर्नेट कुं फेर्य		

In Tibetan the latter of two related English verbs takes precedence of the other, and may be put in the Infinitive, or in the Genitive form of the Infinitive. Thus:—

$$\Gamma$$
 प्राप्त प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र प्राप्त क्षेत्र क्षेत्र

At the same time the Colloquial construction by which  $\mathfrak{F}$  is added to the verbal Root has largely taken the place of the Infinitive. Thus:—

In conversation, however, it is quite allowable and common to omit the  $\triangleleft$  or  $\triangleleft$  of the verb that is governed by the other. Thus:—

ट्रावट द्रायाय में पर्दे ।

I wish to go home.

ट अमार्क निष्णुं मुख्य वर्षे से वर्षेत्र

I am unwilling to write with ink and pen.

This is particularly the case where the governing verb is 33?

To be able, 57?

To be allowed, 37?

To allow, 57?

To be necessary; must, ought, and the like.

EXAMPLES:-

মুন।

মুন।

I cannot see the snow on the hill.

दर्शकार्या मार्थित क्षा प्राप्त क्षा भागा Are we room

Are we allowed to smoke in the room?

८.ष्ट्र. प्रेड्र. चढ्या।

Let us go away.

**८श**.ब्रिंद.ज.उर्बेश.उडिया।

I allow you to depart.

मुर्केद्र'यदि देदः वा अद्मेविहा

In order to live it is necessary to eat.

You must go to school.

मुँदःगुँशसुः**नु**देःह्दःशेःद्रनेष।

You ought not to beat that child.

Where the governing verb is one of *Knowing*, Saying, Hearing, Thinking, or the like, the governed verb, in sentences like the following, is put in the Infinitive, or else the verbal Root, with significant annexed, is used.

EXAMPLES:--

हिंदित्रहेर्द्वः स्वर्गात्राचित्र

I did not know that you were here (you to be here).

ট্রি-বারেন্র্রিন (or ব্র্রান্ত্র) হয় I do not know where you are going (you to be going).

লুধ:ব. (or **লুধ:**ये.) ্ব**-ব৴।** লু. ফ্রীপ: ग্রীপ: প্রশে: येश: র্চি-স্ন স্থান: নু্র্

History relates that Buddha was (Buddha to have been) at first a king.

हिर्दे हे ब्रीट त्यत्वे यः (or तर्ने कुं)

I heard you were going (you to be going) to Darjeeling.

हिंद्र हे ब्रीट या में पा प्रेक् या एक या दक्षा में या

I heard you had left (you to have left) for Darjeeling.

ৼয়৾৾৽ট্রিই:এই ইশ্বানিপুর্বানধ্যসা

I thought you had bought (to have bought) the horse.

मृत्र्युर क्या। मृत्रुक्त प्रत्याच्या मान्द्रे च द्वा या भ्रिकाया

When they saw that the work had been entrusted to me (the work to have been entrusted to me).

The same construction is also used in connection with phrases like It were better that, It is evident that.

It were better that a large stone were bound on his neck and he were (he to be) cast into the sea. (Mark ix. 42).

It is evident that no one is justified by the law in God's sight. (Gal. iii. 11).

In phrases containing That, So that, In order that, With the object of, To the end that, For the purpose of, the verb is put in the genitive case of the Infinitive, and is followed by 55°2° in the Colloquial, and by 35°5° or 55°5° in Literary Tibetan.

EXAMPLES:-

८.पर्.य.ज्यूर.पर्.यूर.यूर.यूर.

In order that I may, or might, be here.

দিবিশেন দ্বিশিন্ত বিশ্বনা 

তি that he may, or might, go home.

আমি ব্রদামন ইলানেই ক্রম।

আমি ব্রদামন ইলানেই ক্রম।

আমি ব্রদামন ইলানেই ক্রম।

আমি ব্রদামন ইলানেই ক্রম।

আমি the object of climbing to the pass.

আমি ক্রমনেই ক্রমানিই ক্রমা

Where, in English, a mandatory Imperative governs a verb in the Infinitive, e.g. Order him to come, Tell him not to go, the Tibetan construction puts the governed verb also in the Imperative, not the Infinitive, mood.

EXAMPLES:-

Whenever it is possible to turn a verb into a Verbal Noun, or what is called in Latin a Gerund, it should be done.

EXAMPLES:--

ग्राची निया होति । (तर्रे ) यहा है है It is better to be in Darjeeling than in Calcutta, i.e. the being in Angentus, i.e. the being in Darjeeling is better than the staying in Calcutta.

or यहा है । यहा है । यहा है । हा के कि to me to live is Christ and to

# B.—The Supine.

The genius of the Tibetan language is so different from that of other languages, both Eastern and Western, ancient or modern, that to

speak of Supines, Gerunds, and the like, in connection with it, is at least to strain the limits of analogy, if not to indulge in the illegitimate. But, so long as this is remembered, the Supine of Literary Tibetan may be said to be susceptible of several constructions. First, it may appear in the shape of the Infinitive put in the Terminative case with  $\mathbf{z}$ .

### Examples:—

सुंशः भूमा। सुंशः गुष्टः कर्मो यरः बुंशः यः दे कः में। यर•

He that is able to receive (hear) it let him receive (hear) it. (Matt. xix. 12).

श्च-रेम्बरायादे म्बेर्नियर लु।

I ask to be forgiven this wrong. (2 Cor. xii. 13).

लम्बाक्षा सम्बद्धाः सम्बद्धाः

Worthy art thou to receive glory. (Rev. iv. 11).

रश्चितरम्बद्धाययश्

I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4).

वर्गोदार्ग्यः इस्रशःया नादशः र्द्धाः श्रीदः यरःशः होरः देना। Forget not to show love unto (bestow love on) strangers. (Heb. xiii. 2).

Secondly, it may take the form of the Verbal Root, with 5, 5, 5, 8, or, less frequently, A, annexed.

## Examples:-

<u>ट्रिस</u>:श्री <u>ट्रिस:श्री</u> <u>ट्रिस:श्री</u> <u>ट्रिस:श्री</u> <u>ह्रिस:श्री</u> <u>ह्रिस:श्री</u>

I came not to call the righteous but sinners. (Mark ii. 17).

मार्यः । पर्ने मान्त्री सम्मित्य स्त्रमा प्रविमा स्रे क्विं स्त्रा That he should lay his hands on their heads and pray. (Matt. xix. 13).

तराप्ति । दशाप्ति । श्रीमामी पिट । यशा च उ । पहिमा

I will give him to eat of the tree of life.

म्रिट.कृतश्रत्ताः हिमामाञ्चमश्रायः स्वयशः श्रा विभागत्तर्भः प्रमामाञ्चमश्रायः स्वयशः श्रा

This bottle is (likely) to crack.

He has gone to buy a horse.

Thirdly, it may appear as the Infinitive, put in the genitive case and followed by 35 or 3551

EXAMPLES:-

ল ३४ राप् . द्वेर अप् अप अप . यस प्राप्त स्था । इं. द्वेयाश की. मीजा श्राह्म प्राप्त स्था प्राप्त स्था ।

The Queen of the South came from the ends of the Earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon. (Luke xi. 31).

प्टि-मैंग ब्रिन मैंग नर् हीर रे हेरे

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2).

The Colloquial has no Infinitive in the Terminative case with That is only found in Literary Tibetan. In the Colloquial, therefore, the Supine never appears in that form. It expresses itself either through the Infinitive alone, or through the Infinitive put in the genitive case and followed by 55°A' (and generally means "In order to," or "For the purpose of"), or through the particles To (when necessity or obligation is implied), or A' (object or purpose) annexed to Verbal Roots.

EXAMPLES:-

च्या वास्त्र वास्त्र क्षेत्र क विद्या वास्त्र क्षेत्र क्षेत्र

A carpenter has come to mend the chair.

মার্কীকী সেঁব। মার্কীকী সেঁব।

I am on my way (going) to Court, to see the trial.

८. २८. भ्रकेश - ये. हुण क्रा. केये. संतु. हुने. जा.

Come with me to hear the music.

राणिका निर्माति । मिराया पर्केरा भाष्ट्री went to Calcutta to sell my house.

हैं है न्त्री त्याद में नुष्य देट पुराया र्केंट। How far is it (to go) to Darjeeling.

C.—The Verbal Noun.

What this is may be seen in the sentence, For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. Here, the Infinitives, To live, and To die, may be turned into Nouns, The living, and The dying.

In Literary Tibetan the Verbal Noun appears either in the guise of the Infinitive (which, as already explained, is formally the same as the Noun and the Participle) or in the guise of the Infinitive followed by the Definite Article of Thus, in Literary Tibetan, either of the following contsructions is right:—

ट्रिंट्यावर्के राष्ट्रमः विगाभेद। वके यः अदः सदः सदेः देवः अवदे । Or:-

८ र र त्यवर्के य देश मे गा भेदा वर्क य **अट** सब सदि देव भेव के।

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. (Philip. i. 21).

So also:

वज्ञद्रशः नुद्रयः (वः) येन्यश्यः शःश्री

It is not expedient to marry. (Matt. xix. 10).

श्र. तैया.त्. ध्या. थश. श्रोपंट्र. यीजा श्रीट. रे. वहमाय (के) **नग**र्ने।

It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven. (Matt. xix. 23).

র্থিক'ব। ইণ্ডরমম'দেবিম'অন্থা (বি) Master, it is good for us to be here. यमार्चा धेर्म

(Luke ix. 33).

Colloquially the Verbal Noun may be expressed either through the Infinitive followed by  $\mathbf{A}_{\mathbf{a}}^{\mathbf{a}}$ , or  $\mathbf{b}_{\mathbf{a}}^{\mathbf{a}}$ , or through the Verbal Root followed by \$\overline{\pi}\$, or \$\pi\$, with or without \$\overline{\pi}\$

EXAMPLES:—

विगुव्य वर्षे श्रे वा इट था श्रेमश हट हट The hitting, i.e. To hit a man when he is down, is cowardly. 351

परि उ र्षेर पापर प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त । It is better to be here than there; The being here is better, etc. थमामारेर।

Ar or F may be annexed to W if desired, but its omission makes no difference.

EXAMPLES:-

**८१.३.८**च्ये.ल.क्षुर.च्य.५१।

Or :—

It is pleasant to walk here.

ঀঀ৽ঽ৽ঀ৾৾য়ৢ৾৸ঀঀ৽ৠৢ৾ৼয়৾৽ঽ**ঀ**৾

In fact, the Verbal Noun, just like any other noun, is subject to declension.

EXAMPLES:--

यर:द्वेश। वर:द्वेश। सर:द्वेश।

Let every man be swift to hear. slow to speak, slow to wrath. (Every man should be swift as regards hearing, slow as regards being angry). (James i. 19).

The Verbal Noun may be formed out of any of the Infinitives, Present, Past, or Future.

# D.—Participles.

The Present Participle of every verb is, in its simplest form, the Present Root with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, I, I and I, as III Climbing; III Being; III Leaving; III Receiving; IIII Crowding; IIII Hearing; or with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, and all vowels, as III Beating; IIII Gnawing; IIIII Falling; IIIII Rejoicing; IIII Going; and the Past Participle in its simplest form is the Perfect Root with I annexed, as IIII Spoken, or with I annexed, as IIII Spoken, or with I annexed, as IIII Pulled out; or, where there is no Perfect Root, then the Present Root, with I or I, as the case may be, added to the completive auxiliary as IIII or I, and IIIIIII

From either of these Participles may be formed the Active Participle, by taking the Present or Perfect Root and adding to it the word 35%, or 35%, or 35%, or 35%, signifying the Doer,

Agent, or Instrument. The phrase thus formed can be used either as an adjective or as noun.

EXAMPLES:--

श्रमामर्थेर (or नशर) समिकरी The sheep-killer. श्रमामार्केन (or प्रश्नन) स्नाम्बर्भो भे ने The sheep-killing man.

These, it is obvious, can also be rendered periphrastically, thus: He who kills, or killed, the sheep.

But the simple Participles, Present or Past, can also themselves be used periphrastically, by regarding either as an adjective and putting it in the genitive case if it precedes its noun, or in the nominative if it follows its noun.

Examples:-

เพาฐรามผิงผมรำระเทิสาะเพาะที่สา The work that I do (the by me **२५८.४.लब्स्यर.५४८.स्.चेर.र्हे। અદ**: ፫: བདང: བའོ: ལབ: శ్రీད: गुऀয়: गु८: ང་མ་ **ちれてごがおきていめる** 

doing work) itself bears witness that the Father hath sent me (to have sent me). (John v. 36).

And the Father which sent me (the me having sent Father) hath also borne witness of me. (John v.

The above illustrate the adjective phrase preceding its noun. The following are examples of the Participial Adjective following its noun:-

মার্দিনের instead of The man who is coming: The coming man. दिन्यदे से दे। The book that was sent: The sent book. ব্যাক্তম্বদ্দান্ত instead of यरदायदी रयो करो।

In the Colloquial the construction of these Active Participles and Periphrastic Participial phrases is in Apr for animates, human or otherwise, and in I or I for inanimates, in both cases annexed to the root. Here, too, the expression or phrase may be treated either as a noun or as an adjective, and in the latter case it may precede or follow its noun.

EXAMPLES :-

ल्ट्रायकमी के रे।

Or:-

श्रेंभ्राम्यम्बरी

सरमीय समिरमी समारा

Or:-

यन्यः भूरः मुचः सम्बरः रो।

ल्ट्ससम्बद्धीः सन्

Or :-

भ्रे सिंद्शमान्दरी।

सर्यन्तेयःश्राप्तरानीःसन्।य।

Or:--

समानाः सेर्-चर्चियः स्राप्तः रो।

केंद्र'केंद्र'प्वमें यदे भूट ब्रेट दे।

Or :---

निर्देर के दु के दु पत्री न दे।

केन्द्रकेन्द्रकेंद्रन्ते विद्रकेंद्रने।

Or :--

चैटार्बेट के उन्कें उन्केंट चारी

The coming man; the man who is coming; the comer.

The grunting pig; the pig that is grunting; the grunter.

The man who came.

The pig that grunted.

The growing tree; the tree that grows.

The grown tree: the tree that grew.

The tree that is to grow, or will

In the case of verbs with no Future root, the Literary Future Active Participle is formed thus:—

के.रु.के.रु.पर्चे.भाम्य-मी.पुट.र्झेट.रु। or perhaps पर्चे.सी.ती.पुट.र्झेट.रु।

মর্থিনে মান্ত্রন্থানি বি। or perhaps The man who is to see, or who will see.

grow.

सर्वेट कुं प्येष पदि से रे।

In the Colloquial 5 is used thus:—

के'रु'के'रु'तभू कुते' निष्ट्रहर्ट दे।

The tree that is to grow, or that will grow.

As regards the rendering of the Passive Voice, see § 31, ix. A. Relative Pronouns.

The Future Participle, in Literary Tibetan, is expressed by the Present Participle put in the terminative case with  $\overline{5}$ , and followed by  $\overline{5}$ , signifying About to..., or To be...ed. In fact, formally, it is the same as the Present Infinitive of the Passive Verb.

Also by the Future Root with  $\mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet}$  annexed, signifying For...ing; or by the Present or Future Root with  $\mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet}$  annexed.

### EXAMPLES:-

हुश.रा.लुब्री ट्रेट. क्षश्य मोशूर.तर. चे. चर्ट. लेमो. हेर.

We were accounted as sheep for the slaughter (To be slaughtered sheep). (Rom. viii. 36).

ইন-ইন্সান-প্রথম এই-চেক্র্রি-চর্মুব-ব্রিই-

Whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning. (Rom. xv. 4).

The Colloquial is the Root with র্লুনি or মন্ত্র, or মন্ত্র annexed:—
েক্ত নাইন্ র্লুনি প্রনাধ্য মন্ত্র মহাহাহ We were regarded as sheep for the slaughter.

মান্তব্য (or নাইন্ মন্ত্রিশ্বা)!

(or ক্রুই:) ব্রুমের্ম্ব্রম্য শর্ম আবা written for our learning.

Many Participial expressions with a Present or Past signification are also formed by annexing to the bare Verbal Root, or to the Participle, the Auxiliary Verbal Particles already dealt with at an earlier stage of this paragraph. The following are all annexed to the Root:—

ர், நீ. நீ. இ. ....ing. Present signification. Periphrastic form.

দীব, দীব, দীব, থেব ....ing. Present. Sometimes periphrastic.

 $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ ,  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ ,  $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$  ...ing ...ed. Present or Past according to root.

ਤੋੜ', ਕ੍ਰੈਫ਼', ਮ੍ਰੈਫ਼' ...ing. ...ed. Usually Present, but sometimes Past.

```
TN' and TN' ...ing. ...ed. Really N' annexed to Participle.

As, when, since. Usually Past.
...ed. Past.

...ing. ...ed. Much like SC' and S' and their variants.

The straightful of th
```

The following are annexed to the Participle:-

# E.—Gerunds.

This name is another instance of the attempt that has somewhat unfortunately been made to present the mysteries of Tibetan in the guise of western nomenclature. What has already been dealt with under the heading *Verbal Noun* was really the Gerund in the Nominative case (equivalent to the Present Infinitive); and the constructions usually called Gerunds in Tibetan Grammars are really a kind of Participial expressions; none other, in fact, than those which we have just been considering.

Here reference may be made to a form of the Gerund in the genitive case which is common in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, though it might equally well have apppeared under the heading Verbal Noun.

## Examples:—

ধুব্রমমা ই শুম নাম নাম মান্ত Brethren, these things ought not so to be (of the being so, there is not propriety). (James iii. 10).

ट्रेस्ये प्रेस्ये स्मिश्स्। ट्रेस्ये प्रेस्ये प्रेस्ये मान्स्य ते स्मिन्यः

We ought to give the more earnest heed to the things that were heard (of the taking pains by us as regards the heard-things there is the more propriety or necessity). (Heb. ii. 1).

ন্ত্রিক্ত্রি (or ক্রিমেরি or ক্রিট্রি) Now is the time to buy, i.e. of buying = for buying.

(N.B.—This last is Colloquial.)

F.—Indicative.

## (a) PRESENT.

In Literary Tibetan this is formed with the Present Root in several ways, some of which are as follows:—

1.—By the simple Root for all persons, singular and plural; as মেন্দ্রী I go; দ্রিমেন্দ্রী Thou goest; দ্রিমেন্দ্রী He goes; মার্ক্রমেন্দ্রী We go, etc.; মেন্দ্রিমিন্দ্রী I send, দ্রিম্নীন্দ্রীমান্দ্রিমিন্দ্রী Thou sendest, etc.

2.—At the end of sentences, by the simple Root as above, with the addition of  $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$  in the case of verbs like  $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$ , the root of which ends in a vowel, and, in the case of other verbs, reduplicating the final letter of the root, and putting over it; as  $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$   $\widetilde{\mathbf$ 

In fact, throughout all conjugations the singular and plural are alike.

Where, however, the Root ends in  $\mathfrak{A}$ , another  $\mathfrak{A}$  with  $\sim$  superposed is not added, but the  $\sim$  is put over the first  $\mathfrak{A}$ . Thus  $55\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ . I drive.

3.—By putting the Infinitive into the Terminative case with ና and adding the auxiliary 🕱ና or ୈଟ୍ଟ୍ Do, or Does, for all persons; as ፔርሻፕቫፕፕቯና or ፔርሻፕፕፕቯናፕ I do walk; ፳፫ናሻፕፕፕቯና Thou dost walk; ፳፫ናሻፕፕፕቯና He does walk; ፫፻ናሻፕፕፕቯና I do know, etc. An intensive form.

- 4.—A rather obsolete form is to add the \$\frac{3}{5}\$ or \$\frac{3}{5}\$ for direct to the Root; as \$\frac{3}{5}\$ for \$I\$ do go, etc., \$\frac{3}{5}\$ for \$I\$ do know, etc.
- 5.—Periphrastically, by the simple Participle Present, combined with the appropriate conjugation of 35 or 5 or 5 or any of their elegant or honorific forms. But this is rather a doubtful form and in any case old.

EXAMPLES:-

「京南河田城下, or 和高和 | I am going.

「京下南河田城下, or 和京和 | Thou art going.

「南下南河田城下, or 和京和 | Or 和京和 | Or 和高和田村 | He is going.

Or 和高和田村 | Or 和京和 | Or 和高和田村 | Or 和南村 | Or 和南

6.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate conjugation of  $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{W}_{5}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$   $\widetilde{T}_{7}$  or  $\widetilde{W}_{7}$  according to the rule relating to the final letter of the root, as:—

7.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate elegant or honorific form of \$\tilde{\mathbb{U}}\sigma^2\tau\$ or \$\frac{\pi}{\mathbb{U}}\sigma^2\tau\$, the link being the auxiliary particle \$\frac{\pi}{\mathbb{U}}\sigma^2\tau\$ or \$\frac{\pi}{\mathbb{U}}\sigma^2\tau\$ This is, however, obsolete.

I am sending.

Thou art sending.

मिट्ट मीश मिट्ट प्रिंग अर्डेश, or मान्त, }
or अर्डेश प्राप्ति ।

And :--

दशमिर्दे निवित्र निवित्र ।

मिन्गीसमिन्दानिसमान्।

मिट कीश मिर्टेट मिल्निश प्रति , or सद्त , or मिल्निश स रेर्।

As regards the Colloquial, when the Present Root of a verb ends in an inherent W, or Q, or in or , that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative. With all other verbs the Colloquial, according to Mr. Bell, usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any; or, as seems more likely, at least the sound of it. When writing the Colloquial it is advisable, or allowable, to employ the proper root.

The formation of the tense then proceeds thus:-

- 1.—The Root (Present or Perfect) for all persons, as 도착경 I see or look; 도착기정도 I bring forth; 도착영 I request; but either 도착기정도 or 도착기정도 I send.
- 2.—Periphrastically. The Root (Present or Perfect) combined with the appropriate conjugation of  $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1}}$ ,  $\widetilde{U}$  To be; the connecting link being  $\widetilde{\Psi}$ ,  $\widetilde{U}$ , or  $\widetilde{U}$ , or  $\widetilde{U}$  (though  $\widetilde{\Psi}$  generally takes the place of these last two), agreeably to the final letter of the root.

EXAMPLES:—

८श.के.ची.लूरी

I am looking.

ট্রিন্ (or র্থরি, ত্রিন্দা)

Thou art starting.

দিশ্লবি (or শ্লিব্রুন) শূর্মিন্দা, or He is arriving.

বিশা, or মিন্মেনি।

## (b)—IMPERFECT.

This expresses the idea of the Periphrastic Past: Was, wast, were .... ing.

In Literary Tibetan it may be rendered by the Perfect root (if any), with  $\Im$  or  $\Im$  annexed, combined with the Indicative Present of Literary  $\Im \Im \Im$  To be. Thus:—

মেন্দ্রমান্ত্র ক্রিন্দ্রমান্তর প্রাপ্তর death. (Acts viii 1.)

Or it may take the form of the Perfect Root (if any) with one of the auxiliary Verbal Particles or Suspensives annexed, and combined with  $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ :

EXAMPLES:-

ম'মে'ম'ন্থিমান্ম'র্ম'র্মান্ম'ন্ম'র্ম'র এম ন্দ্র'র Maky were (being) gathered together and were praying. (Acts মা: 12.)

Probably however, it would generally be found put participially. Thus:—

নি বিশ্ব প্র প্র প্র ব্যাস্থা ব্রহাম ন্ত্রী প্র প্র প্র লাম the number of the disciples was multiplying (the number, etc. multiplying) (Acts vi. 1.)

This almost endlessly Suspensive Construction, as the ordinary feature of a Tibetan sentence, which really only contains an absolute statement at the end, must never be forgotten.

In the Colloquial the Imperfect Indicative has no special form. It simply employs the Present Tense construction, leaving the context (generally some adverb like Paris Yesterday, Para Recently, or Paris Long ago), to indicate the Past idea, if it exists.

EXAMPLES:--

নিষ্ ষ্ব দেনে মে দেনু নি সৈত্য হা Yesterday I was going to Court.

ध्वातापुरिवाद्याम् सेवाद्यात् कुर्जिः स्वाता The herd was roving about in the forest.

स्र-संस्थितः प्राप्त नी स्रिन्य प्रमा

Anciently man resembled a monkey.

(c)—PERFECT.

This, which expresses the idea Have, hast or has . . . . ed, is rendered, in both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, by the Perfect Root combined with the appropriate elements of 🌣 To be, which, it will be remembered, are not quite the same in the two modes. Thus, in Literary Tibetan the construction is as follows:—

दशःमुश्रुदशःयःप्येतः वृ

I have spoken.

हिंद गुरुषमाश्चरश्चर पत्रुमार्थे or, occasionally, धेदाँदें।

Thou hast spoken.

मिट मीशमाश्चरसाय प्रेन हैं।

He has spoken.

This tense is not infrequently used for our Past Indefinite.
Thus:—

८ दे दें दें पर्टे परिटे पर्टे परिटे परिटे

To this end came I forth. (Mark i. 39.)

In Colloquial the construction is as follows:-

टश.चोश्चेटश.च.लुक्।

1 have spoken.

मुर्गणुश्रमश्रुद्धारम् दात्रुम् or देर्।

Thou hast spoken.

নিমানাধ্বমের ইব or, occasionally, Hè has spoken.

तर्मा

This also is often used for our Past Indefinite. Thus:—

मिश्रदःदशःद्वदेः हेशयाधित।

I bought this horse yesterday.

Another Colloquial rendering of the Perfect Tense is to add JE or NE or CAM, or even NEAM or JENE, to the Perfect Root, if any: the construction being the same for all persons. Thus:--

दशःश्वरात् चिरः ॲटशः ॲ**र**।

I have brought the box.

८स-द्ये ऋ-वत्त्रवास-तर्वा।

I have read the book.

प्रिश.लू.चू.धूच.चैट.।

He has received the letter.

B-3-9-3-1

The dog has died.

मि:सर्छ-दे-श्रमा यस्द्र-श्रॅट-२ द्मा।

The suit has been decided.

Certain verbs usually take  $\Im \Box$  in preference to  $\Im \Box$ , and others  $\Im \Box$  in preference to  $\Im \Box$ . In this connection practice will make perfect. The following are a few that take  $\Im \Box$ , namely,  $\Im \Box$  T odo;  $\Im \Box$  T obuild;  $\Im \Box$  T of fear;  $\Im \Box$  T odie;  $\Im \Box$  T oset out, depart, start;  $\Im \Box$  T ounderstand;  $\Im \Box$  T osteal;  $\Im \Box$  T osteal;  $\Im \Box$  T obe finished;  $\Im \Box$  and  $\Im \Box$  T ocome, arrive;  $\Im \Box$  T oburn; and the following are a few that take  $\Im \Box$ , namely,  $\Im \Box$  T or receive, get, obtain;  $\Im \Box$  T ohear;  $\Im \Box$  T osee;  $\Im \Box$  T othrow;  $\Im$  G is generally seen with the 1st person, and where this is so the other persons usually take  $\Im \Box$ 

# (d) PAST INDEFINITE.

In Literary Tibetan, at the end of sentences, this consists of the plain Perfect Root for all persons, with the final letter generally reduplicated.

EXAMPLES: -

रे बुरा रे रिना दुरा रू ऑरश बुश थे पु Then they came up to Jesus and took him. (Matt. xxvi. 50.)

मिट मीय बिट मीय यह हीर रे हिर हैं।

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2.)

When the verb possesses no Perfect Root the Present Root is used.

Examples:-

But in phrases like the following, introductory to what a speaker has said, the Perfect Participle is always used:—

लु.चैश.चिश्वेटश.दा।

Jesus said. (John xx. 17.)

क्षरात्मत्रेराय । इसरात्मत्रेराय ।

Mary Magdalene came and said to the disciples. (John xx. 18.)

के.मार्थश्रामाविष्यः सः स्मर्थाःग्रीश्राम्यः तः स्रीश्रामा

The other disciples said unto him. (John xx. 25.)

देवे पदानु विस्तरा बुद्धारा।

Thomas answered and said. (John xx. 28.)

But note the following construction where the verb, being at the end of the sentence, is not put participally, but in the form of the plain Perfect Root again:—

नुश्राम्या ... ८ श्रे अर्वेट थट र् र

Jesus to him...blessed are they that have not seen and yet have believed. Thus he said. (John xx. 29.)

Sometimes one sees:

बिश्रामाश्चिदश्यायान्वर दे।

Thus it has been said. (1 Cor. x. 7.)

Note also the following construction, where \$5.5 for she could does not occur at the end of a sentence, and is put participally:—

वुर्केर्णुशम्द्रव्यायानुश्यायायेव।

The woman hath done what she could. (Mark xiv. 8.)

In the Colloquial the Past Indefinite is rendered by the plain Perfect Root, if any, or, if none, then by the Present Root, with  $\Sigma \Gamma$  or  $\Gamma$  added; and this holds for all persons.

EXAMPLES: -

प्रमाशः स्था प्रशासि विषय I received the letter all right.

In these cases, however, it would be just as correct to use the Perfect Tense: \Passaction \Passaction

## (c) PLUPERFECT.

This tense, which expresses the idea *Had...ed*, is seldom or never seen in Literary Tibetan at the end of a sentence, i.e. as an absolute statement. It is usually met with in an introductory or suspensory clause, and is then rendered participially with a past signification. Thus:—

**พ**८:रे.ज.चश्रम:ब्रॅ.चर्ट.ब्रश

And when he had considered the thing; i.e. Having considered, etc. (Acts xii. 12.)

विद्याः बेर्द्य ।

When she had thus said; i.e. Having thus said. (John xx. 14.)

Sometimes it is turned into an adjective phrase, i.e. the Past Participle is put in the genitive case. Thus:—

भेजिट में निर्माय क्षाता Where the body of Jesus had lain. (John xx. 12.)

In phrases like the following it is constructed by combining with the Perfect Participle, thus making a sort of Past Infinitive.

EXAMPLES:--

ਰੁੱਧਾ । ਇੱਕ ਦਾ ਦੇਸ਼ ਦਾ ਦੇਸ਼ ਹੋਂ ਦਾ ਦੇਸ਼ ਹੋਂ । heard you had gone (you to have gone) to Darjeeling.

্রিপ্রান্থ নির্মান্ত নার্থ ন

ন্দ্রেষ্ঠার এই প্রমান্ত্রির প্রমান্ত্রির প্রমান্তর প্রমান্ত প্রমান্তর প্রমান্তর প্রমান্তর প্রমান্তর প্রম

When they saw that the work had been entrusted (to have been entrusted) to me.

When it does appear at the end of a sentence, it may take the form of the Perfect Root, followed by 5%, and combined with the Present Indicative of 5%: Thus:—

८४.घ५८.वशर्भेर्।

I had sent.

मुँद्-गुरु-वर्द-वर्द्ध-वर्-ना

Thou hadst sent.

मिश्राचर्टादशः स्ट्रिन or तर्ना

He had sent.

or ॲर्र्स्सरेर्।

Or better:-

Ditto.

Sometimes, e.g. in cases in which the direct mode of speech is adopted, the Pluperfect is avoided in favour of the Perfect.

EXAMPLES: -

भूष: लभ्नः भवी: रेज. भःष्ट्रशः हे हे विद्यादाः भूषश्चात्रः हे स्मेरः हुशः दः जः विश्वेद्रः हो। भूषः विश्वेषः हे स्मेरः हुशः दः जः विश्वेद्रशः हो। भूषः

Mary Magdalene cometh (having come) and telleth (told) the disciples, I have seen the Lord; and how that he had (has) said these things unto her (me). (John xx. 18.)

The Colloquial has no special Pluperfect Tense. Any of the preceding Past Tenses belonging to it may be used (whichever is the more convenient), or even perhaps the Literary construction in AN attached to the Perfect Root and combined with  $\Im 5 \Im 1$ 

Examples: ---

मि श्रेयश या द्राट प्रव श्रेट ।

When he arrived I had gone.

মে দ্বাক বিনি দিন কাম বিদ্যালয় I had already sent him the book.

मिक्षारायादमायाद्यायाद्या

He had never been to Lhasa.

(Note. — 555 (pron. nyúng) Ever, or, with a negative, Never, is in all tenses attached to the root, and treated as part of the verb.)

In other respects the Colloquial constructions are much like the Literary.

EXAMPLES:—

শিষামান্ত্র মান্ত্র মোনা or ভারামান্ত্র I did not know that he had married. त.एश.जुश.श.शूट.।

一部でいってい

When he had gone.

## (f) FUTURE.

The Literary construction of this tense is either with the plain Future Root (if any) of the verb, or with the Present Infinitive in the Terminative case, combined with the auxiliary verbs and become, or be; 5'5' To become or do; and 35'5' or WE'5' To come. The construction with 57 is Intensive. There is also another construction with the Present or Future Root combined with 5 and the auxiliary verb 🛱 🎖 To be. This carries the meaning I am to, or I All these constructions, save the last, are used with all persons.

EXAMPLES:--

**EN** '521' & '5' B 5' A' 475 C'E 1 दश'द्रश'क'दे'हिंद'शमिंद्रिंपर'द्रमुद्र'र्दे I shall send thee the book. दशर्योकरोष्ट्रियमार्नेट्रायरानुदे।

I shall send thee the book.

I am (or have) to send thee the book.

Thou art (or hast) to send me the book.

He is (or hath) to send thee the book.

In the Colloquial the Simple Future is formed either with  $\widetilde{W} \zeta^*$  (for all persons) annexed to the Perfect Root (or probably more correctly to the Future Root), or with the Present Root combined with the Present Indicative of  $\widetilde{W} \zeta^* \zeta^*$  To be, the link between them being  $\widetilde{Y}$ ,  $\widetilde{Y}$ , or  $\widetilde{Y}$ , according to rule with reference to the last letter of the Root.

EXAMPLES :--

८४.५ये क दे हिंद या गुरूट स्पट ।

I shall send thee the book.

हिंद कुंश द्ये क दे दाय महद थेंद ।

Thou wilt send me the book.

विकादयोकःदेः विदायामाद्रदार्थेदः ।

He will send thee the book.

Or :-

दशःमोर्देरःमीःश्रे**द।** 

I shall send.

विंद्र गुरुष महिंद भी रेद्र।

Thou wilt send.

विश्वित्र मिर्दि मी देरा

He will send.

The other Future tenses, as known to Tibetan, are only found in connection with the Subjunctive and Conditional Moods. The first is similar to the Perfect tense. Thus:—

EN-25E-2-2/4

I would send.

मुँद मुँध महामान तुना, or देद।

Thou wouldst send.

मिलायद्रायाचेत्र, or त्रुम्।

He would send.

However, with this the Simple Future may also be used.

The second is formed with the Perfect Participle combined with the Indicative Present of ২5.4. Thus:—

I would have sent.

Thou wouldst have sent.

 $\tilde{A}$ אַ־מַן סר מַקבימינּק  $\tilde{A}$ ין, He would have sent. or מַקבי $\tilde{A}$ ים בּיִּערָ מַיּבּלָן

Or even thus:-

N.B.—The Future Root is seldom used in the Colloquial, unless, in the case of verbs like \$\sqrt{15\sqrt{2}}\sqrt{3}\, it really lurks in the sound of \$\sqrt{5\sqrt{2}}\sqrt{3}\, as said to be sometimes used in the Future tense, and in the Participles, etc. Even in Literary Tibetan it is not met with very much.

# G.—Subjunctive or Conditional.

When the sentence consists of a conditional clause dependent upon a preceding hypothetical clause in the Present Tense with  $\P \times 5$ . If, or S alone, the conditional clause takes the Indefinite Future in Literary  $R \times S$  or Colloquial  $R \times S$  for all persons. In this Literary and Colloquial Tibetan are the same.

EXAMPLES:-

টুর্'দুর'মি'ম'র্'ব্রমি'বর্ধুর'অনে (or If thou askest him he will give.
গুর'দুর'মর্

When the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies I, Thou, He, etc., would..., this last clause, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, takes the Perfect Participle, combined with  $\sqrt[3]{5}$  in the Present Indicative, which, it will be remembered, is not quite the same in the two languages. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:—

দূর্বিষ্কার্মান্ত্রির বা নেই If ye knew me ye would know my Father also. (John xvi. 7.)
অবশ্যানেই এমনে এই লৈ বেব্দান্ত্রী

हिन् गुरिश्च प्रमाने स्था प्रमाने विद्या प्रमाने विद्या प्रमाने प्रमा

This construction may also apparently be used when the conditional clause signifies Would have...d, e.g. PTNUK Would not have died (John xi. 21); ATCANUK Would not have crucified. (1 Cor. ii. 8); but the construction in WTN (to which we shall come presently) is better.

The Colloquial is much the same as the above.

EXAMPLES:—

দ্বি:ক্রিমানেটে প্রাথান্ধর্ব। দ্বি:অবা If you knew me you would also know my Father.

শুনেটি প্রথানের্শা or অবি।

Or, for all persons:-

८श.ट्र. पेश.रा.लुब।

I would knew.

हिंद कुष दि: विषया वर्षी, or देवा

Thow woulds know.

विश्वार नेश्वास नेतः, or तरुमा

He would know.

But, when the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies Would have....d, then, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, this last clause ought to be constructed with the Perfect Participle combined with the appropriate forms of W5.4 in the Present Indicative. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:-

**८शःश्चराः भेर**।

I would have told.

हिर्गुशस्त्रस्य यत्ना

Thou wouldst have told.

দিমাস্থ্ৰমান্ত্ৰি, or বিশ্বনা, or আঁহা He would have told. 47351

The Colloquial construction is similar.

Examples:—

परेप्तर्भामाध्येयप्राप्तरा<u>ष्ट</u>िर र्के भावन्द्राध्येत् or वन्द्राधेत् or नन्तर्त्वा

Were it not so I would have told you.

## H.—Potential.

In the Colloquial this is formed by adding the auxiliary भूगा To be able, properly conjugated, to the Present Root of the verb it governs. Thus:—

PRESENT.

दशमिर्देट व्यवगी स्पर्

I can send.

ढ़ॖॕॎॸॱॻॖऀॺॱॸऻऀॸॕॱॺॖॖॖॖॖॸॸॸॗॸऻ

Thou canst send,

मिशमिरिट श्रवणी भेर or तर्ना or भेर He can send. य:रे5।

PAST.

(মে) বাইনেপ্রবাসনা। (for all per- (I) could send. sons).

८शमिट्टायुन या श्री

I could send,

দ্র্ভিন্ট্রের্ব্রান্ত্র্বা or ইব্। Thou couldst send.

मिंहा मोर्ने प्रमुद्याय देत or त्रुम्।

He could send.

The Literary construction with ATA is as follows:—

PRESENT.

ĽV.		I can	
<u>ત્રિ</u> ટ.ગુંજ્ઞ. <u>ગિ</u> ટ.ગુંજ્ઞ.	निर्दे शुद्ध दे	Thou canst He can	senut.

#### PAST.

I could send.

Thou couldst send.

He could send.

I could have sent.

(And so on as in the Colloquial.)

But the Literary construction may also be with the auxiliary ज्ञाप To be able, which, unlike squit, governs the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:-

#### PRESENT.

दशमिर्देशम् वर्षाः

I can send.

(And so throughout.)

#### PAST.

दशमिर्देर वर बुशमाधिक वे। or धेव दें।

I could send.

ष्ट्रिन जुर्रा महिंद यर बुर्रा य त न न ने

Thou couldst send.

मिंद्र मीश मोर्देद यर बुद्धारा ध्वेद दें।

He could send.

दशमिर्देर वर वृश्य थेर दें।

I could have sent.

ष्ट्रिन गुरुषानिहर यर नुरुषाय दन्या में।

Thou couldst have sent.

मिंद्र-मीर्थ-मोर्देद-चर-बुश्च-चर्चिं or **८**नमानीं or ल्रिन्सक्षिन्दी

He could have sent.

N.B.—It is important to remember that  $\mathfrak{Z}^{\mathfrak{T}}$ , both in Literary Tibetan and the Colloquial, is annexed to the Root of the verb it governs.

# I.—Probability, etc.

Phrases expressive of the likelihood or possibility of doing any thing are, in Literary Tibetan, rendered by means of the auxiliary verb \$\sqrt{5}\sqrt{1}\cdot To be possible, or by the expression \$\sqrt{1}\sqrt{1}\cdot Who knows?} = May be.

EXAMPLES:-

र्यु मेश प्रत्में दे or दर्मे प्रत्मु रहे। I may go; perhaps, possibly, probably I shall go.

प्रामिति (or even मिति पर ) श्री रें । I may send.

हिन् गुरुपार्टि (or महिंदि पर) श्रेन् हैं। Thou mayest send.

मिंद्र'मी अ' मार्नेद्र' (or मार्नेद्र'यर') श्रीद्रेन्द्र । He may send.

दशम्बेर्टर:श्रेर यथिव वे ।

I might send.

ট্রিণ্টুশন্টিশেশ্বীশ্বান্তি,

Thou mightest send.

or श्रेंब दें।

मिट्ट मीश्रामिट्ट श्रीद या धीव कें।

He might send.

दशमिर्दे: श्रे**र** य **ॲर** रें।

I might have sent.

मिन की सम्मिन स्थित स्थित स्थान

Thou mightest have sent.

विंदः मीश्रामिद्दः श्रीतः यात्तु मार्गि,

He might have sent.

or ॲरर्रे।

The auxiliary 35 To be, combined with the Root or the Infinitive, put in the Terminative case, also conveys the idea of probability or likelihood. Thus:—

भ्रेष्ट्रियम् रायुगा

This man is probably going.

८श.रे.हेर.रम्<u>ज</u>श.सर.पर्ना।

I shall probably have to give it.

युम्रायादीत्रम्मासासुरत्नुम्।

That bottle is likely to crack.

In the Colloquial শ্ৰু-প্ৰা, or স্ট্ৰান্ত্ৰি, Perhaps, or the auxiliaries অব্যাব্ৰ, or অব্লা, may be used instead of শ্ৰুত্ৰ

N.B.— এব সূ is sometimes written এব বৃদ্ধ Which of these two is the more correct form is somewhat uncertain.

EXAMPLES:-

श्.वेशत्त्रम्म।

I may go, or be going.

शुः विशः हिंद वर्गे मी वर्गा, or देत्।

Probably thou wilt go.

सुःविसार्मि वर्गे नी ने ने , or वर्गा

It is likely he will go.

म्रहमानुद्विद्वरायम् ।

Perhaps I shall go.

(And so on, as above.)

दःदर्ने ने प्रेष्ट्र याद्यः, or प्रेष्ट्रने

I may be going.

(And so throughout.)

दःश्रेट्रियः भेदः स्पर्ने ।

I might be going.

(And so throughout.)

एकेंद्र वर्षेत्र यत्त्रः, or स्पेतः में ।

I might have been going.

(And so throughout.)

मारुमा मुद्देन द्वार स्ट्रास्टर स्ट्रास्टर

I might go.

माउँमा ने न सिंद सिंद प्राय द्वा, or देत्। Thou mightest go.

माउँमा ने ने मार्ग में क्षेंद्र मारे ने ने पार्टिक प्रकार कर का प्रकार कर का मिल का म

म्डिम्' वेद्र'द्र'र्स्स्रिट्य प्रेर्।

I might have gone.

मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित द्वित द्वित प्राप्त का प्रमा का mightest have gone.

मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित द्वित द्वित प्राप्त का प्रमा का मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित द्वित का प्रमा का मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित द्वित का प्रमा का मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित द्वित का प्रमा का मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित का मार्डमा का मार्डमा नुदेन द्वित का मार्डमा का

J.—Hortative.

In the Colloquial this is rendered by  $5\overline{\eta}$  or vulgarly  $5\overline{\eta}$ . To need, To be necessary, To be obliged or compelled; also where we use Must, Ought, Should, Have to. Like  $5\overline{\eta}$ . To be able, it is annexed to the Root, not to the Infinitive, and is used with or without the auxiliaries  $5\overline{\eta}$ . And  $5\overline{\eta}$ . With this verb the subject should be put in the Nominative or Dative (not the Agentive) case.

EXAMPLES:—

५ द्वर प्रतिक प्रतिक or द्वि की भित्र Now I must start.

ट'द्रशंक मित्र महिट'द्रमें र or द्रमें में I have to send him the book.

W51

८.र्याः क.मि.याः मोर्नेटः दम्बिसायाः भेत्।

I had to send him the book.

८.र्नांक्रांक्र्यांच्यामार्नेट्रार्न्यांचीरक्षेत्।

I shall have to send him the book.

प्राथित के प्राप्त के

ळॅर्।

हिंदिर्द्धान्यक्रम्दुः व्यादिन्त्रीयित्तुना।

You ought to come with me.

In Literary Tibetan the construction for all persons is in TINI, not added to the Root, but to the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:—

मिंट के त्येया वर द्वीं शणी। ट के त्वीय धर द्वीं शकी।

He must increase but I must decrease. (John iii. 30).

There is, however, another construction for all persons in 5 or 57 (Future Root of 55%), added to the Infinitive in the Terminative case, or to the Root, but sometimes used by itself.

EXAMPLES:-

दर.भू.चेर्]। तर.भू.चेर्]। तर.भू.चेर्]।

वसरा उर केरा दे अव पर पु।

व्याप्त्रारयार्ग्ना बुटा मुखे।

मार विमा यदमा केर से पर देर य।

रे'रमा'म्बर'य'से'नुदें।

(पद्दर्दिगुर अर्दे: Vol. में) leaf 174).

यश्चरायः मुलिट त्युट पर्या

शरश.चैशं.चर्तरेश.ज.पर्धची.तर.चे।

(Dulva, Vol. 5, Leaf 30).

Let us not (i.e. we should, ought, must not) be weary in well-doing. (Gal. vi. 9).

All should hear this precept;

Having heard, should keep it well;

Whatever things we do not ourselves like;

Should not be done to others.

(Tangyur).

You must exert yourself and arise;

And walk according to Buddha's teaching.

There may be said to be still another construction in  $\mathfrak{F}$  added to the Future Root (or to the Present Root if there is no Future Root) combined with  $\mathfrak{AT}$  in the Present Indicative. This expresses the idea of I am to, or I have to. Thus:—

दशःमा<्रम् प्रेयो

हिंदि गुरुष मार्ट हुं दर्गा

মিহানাইন ক্রিন্সুব।

८.८मूँ कुं.लूब।

हिर दर्जे कु दर्ग।

मिंद्राद्मीं कुंग्भेत।

I have to send.

Thou hast to send.

He has to send.

I am to go.

Thou art to go.

He is to go.

And also another in W Thus:-

८.ज.चीरट.ल.सूरी

I have (or am) to send.

८.ज.पर्से.क.रूरे।

I have (or am) to go.

## K.—Purposive.

To express In order that, In order to, With the object of, or other similar phrase, the Infinitive is put in the Genitive case, followed, in the Colloquial, by 55°0°, and, in Literary Tibetan, by \$5.5° or 55°5°, the construction being the same for all persons.

EXAMPLES:

ন্ধা এম ঘন দ্বি দেশ দ্বি দেশ দ্বি দান দি wrote to me in order that I might know.

सूर नाश्रद्धा प्राप्त होता प्राप्त हैं प्राप्त हैं । spoke thus with the object of pleasing you.

निस् विस्र र्शेन पदे दें अप द्ये के दे मूर्नि He is reading the book in order to learn law.

#### L.—Precative.

Examples:—

নহীন্দ্রন্তিন্ত্রা Let these go their way. (John xviii. 8.)

মে দ্রিন্ মে দার্মমে হার্নার্ডিনার্নি নম Let me send thee some tea.

# क्ष्माऱ्याश्रामाश्रः।

If the governed verb is active and transitive, the subject is in the Agentive.

দ্বির মি রুম্ম শূম মান্ত্র মান্ত মান্ত্র মান্ত্র মান

The Colloquial construction may also be in & but it is usually in \$3,57 (the Perfect Root used as an Imperative); but in either case only the Root of the governed verb is used.

EXAMPLE:

N.B.— ইনাম' in the polite expression ইনাম'নামান, is merely the Colloquial way of pronouncing TTA in the polite Literary expression দ্বাদাধান্দ্রনে Please, Be so good as, etc.

## M.—Permissive

In Literary Tibetan the construction is in Engla To be allowed or permitted; the governed verb being generally put in the Instrumental case of the Infinitive, and the subject in the Agentive, if connected with a Transitive verb.

EXAMPLES:--

दशमार्ट्र पशक्तामा मिंद्र'गुरु'गर्देद्र'यद्यः क्रेमाम् । मिश महिंद पश केमा में। दशमार्नेट पशकेंगाय भेव वे दशमिर्देट वशक्रेम यर दिवीर रू।

I may (or am allowed to) send.

Thou mayest send.

He may send.

I was allowed to send.

I shall be allowed to send.

(N.B.—This construction in  $\square N$ , or  $\square N$ , is generally used in books only.)

Sometimes the construction in 555. To be suitable, or proper, is used idiomatically instead of the above.

EXAMPLE:— חבים איים ביצריב ו

Whatever has been done is proper, which is the ordinary idiom for You may do as you please, or whatever you like.

The Colloquial construction is in England added to the Root of the governed verb. Subject in Nominative for Intransitive verbs.

Examples:—

८ त्रों केंग, or केंग में भेंर।

I may (or am permitted to) go.

हिंद् तर्ने केंना, वा केंनानी तरुना।

Thou mayest go.

मित्रें केंमा, or केंमानी भेर,

He may go.

or त्रुम, or ॲर्परेर्

८.४मॅ.कून.स.लूर. or कून.लूर।

I might have gone, or would have been permitted to go.

८.४ में क्र्मामी लुबे, or क्र्मालूटा।

I shall be allowed to go.

मिंद्र त्र्नें केना मी त्रुमा, or देदः,

Thou wilt be allowed to go.

or क्रमाः ऑदः।

मिंद्रमें केंग मी रेड or केंग स्टा

He will be allowed to go.

But with Transitive verbs the subject is in the Agentive.

EXAMPLES:-

टश.मोर्ट.कूर्य।

I may (or am allowed to) send.

दश:वर्द:र्केन्; or केन्।य:भेर्।

I was allowed to send.

दशमान्द्रः केना , or नन्दः केना भेटा ।

I shall be allowed to send.

Also note:-

प्रविद्यामा स्था प्रमा प्रमा Are we allowed to smoke in this room?

# N.—Optative.

In Literary Tibetan this may be formed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive and adding JT, the Imperative of AJT. To be, To become, followed by J' II, and INT an interjection.

EXAMPLE:-

दशःमोर्देटःचरः**मुरःदःखटः।** 

Would, or Oh, that I might send.

Another Literary construction is in  $\sqrt{9}$ , the Imperative of  $\sqrt{8}$  or  $\sqrt{8}$ . To come; the verb being similarly put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

Examples:—

८श.मोर्ट्रिट चर वेना छेम।

Would that I might send.

हिंदिः श्रीः द्यायः यदे । सुना यदे दिन यदः विना ।

May you without fatigue proceed happily. (Das.)

Another Literary construction is in § If, combined with the expression § 5.5. How suitable, or excellent.

EXAMPLES:--

८.५मू.व.१.भ.२८.।

Oh that, or would that, I were going.

C.M.K.C.4.8.M.ZC.1

Would that I had not gone.

দেশ দ্বা ক'ন্ ট্রিন্ মে ফ্র্র্ন ক্রিলা মা ত্রিক ক্রি Would I were permitted to give you the book.

In the Colloquial the Root or the Infinitive of the verb is used, followed by  $\sqrt[4]{7}$ 

Examples :-

८.४ मूँ (य.) सूना।

Would I were going.

दशमिर्देटः (यः) वृत्री।

Oh that I might send.

The following Colloquialism is also heard:—

ट.चोर्टेट.ब.क्रुचे.रा.छ।

Oh that I might send.

८.५ में. ४. क्रुचे.त.ला

Would I were going.

## O.—Imperative.

It will be remembered that many verbs have no distinctively Imperative Roots. Such, for instance, are NACA To see, and RAT To receive, each of which has only one Root throughout; and To weep and RATA To flee, each of which has only a Present and a Perfect Root. In all such cases the Present Root is used in Literary Tibetan for the Imperative, with the addition of the Imperative sign RAT, RAT, or RAT, agreeably to the final letter of the Root. The further addition of The has a softening effect, and so has INCA politer form adds RANTE to the Root, and a still more respectful form adds RANTE to the Root.

Rules, it is true, are given in some grammars for the formation of the Imperative Root, but, as they are somewhat complex, and, moreover, do not always work, it is just as easy and much safer to look up in the dictionary the Imperative Root of each individual verb, and remember it as well as one can.

Prohibitives are formed with \$\mathbb{A}'\ (never \$\mathbb{A}'\) except in the case of \$\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{A}'\) and \$\mathbb{G}'\) preceding either the Imperative Root or the other part of the verb, if a compound one, e.g. \$\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\, or \$\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{A}'\mathbb{E}\mathbb{C}'\mathbb{E}\math

With some verbs, even though they have Imperative Roots of their own, the Present Roots, and not the Imperative Roots, are used for Prohibitions.

#### EXAMPLES: -

বৃদ্ধ To go; Present Root বৃদ্ধ; Imperative Root মূচ Go, Prohibitive ম'বৃদ্ধ (pron. Man-po.) Do not go.

35''. To do; Present Root 55'; Imperative Root 55' or sometimes 55' Do; Prohibitive 55' Don't do.

Come; Prohibitive NGT Don't come.

In the case of Double Imperatives, the two Roots are united by

EXAMPLES:--

चुना अर्ड्श चेन।

Come and see. (John i. 39.)

In the Colloquial, if one is using the different Roots properly, the true Imperative Root, or, if none, then the Present Root, is adopted for the Imperative, as in Literary Tibetan.

EXAMPLES:-

ট্রি'শ্রীম'র'বর্নি'বা' (for ঘ') ব্রীমা Take charge of this horse.

सहिर्यानुर।

Don't forget.

Or, if the Colloquial has a special Root of its own, it may be used Examples:—

But if, as may often be done, one is using the Perfect Root for all moods and tenses, then that Root is also used for the Imperative, with or without 37, 37, or 37,

If this latter Imperative sign is used at all, the Colloquial usually adopts the form 341

density, however, is only used in the case of stern or urgent orders or injunctions, or when talking to coolies and the like.

5 is also largely used in the Colloquial instead of উল, and has a softening effect.

The following are some of the commoner Colloquial Imperatives and Prohibitives:—

Infinitive.

ব্র্নান To go.

وَجَرِين To do.

WE'T or AET To come.

प्रमिन्न or प्रमिन्न or प्रमिन्न or प्रमिन्न To bring (in hand).

बहुदान (महिंदान) To send.

व्यवारा (व्यवादा) To pour.

মুনান To lay or put down.

Imperative.

<u>श्र</u>ि: or मुना Go.

ਤੁੱਕ' or ਤੁੰਕ' or ਜੁੰਕ' Do.

ৰ্থিনা Come.

तिहर स्वा. or अधिर स्वा. Bring.

र्शेट or महिंद (हिम्) Send.

विवाश (विवा) Pour.

র্মুনে (প্রিমা) Put down.

Negative.

झदर्ने Don't go.

ਬਾਰੇਨ Don't do.

म्प्राप्त or मान्द्र Don't come.

तिहिरसंस्टिं Don't bring.

ম'নাইন' or ম'ন্দ্ৰন' Don't send.

अञ्चन, or अञ्चनश Don't pour.

सः स्रें ता or रा तस्या Don't put down.

As a matter of fact, in these matters there is no rule save custom; for, according as a man is more or less educated, so he will mix up in his speech literary with vulgar forms, and the only way to learn is to keep one's ears open and observe what the prevailing custom is amongst different classes of Tibetans; for some will prefer to use the roots properly, while others, knowing little or nothing of them, will adopt the sound of the perfect root. So far as speaking is concerned, it will not much matter which method is adopted, unless of course one is talking to a cultured Tibetan; but, when writing in Tibetan, the roots should be used properly, and the usage with the perfect root discarded.

#### VI.—THE PASSIVE VOICE.

In Literary Tibetan, as a rule, the subject of a transitive active verb, or of a causative verb, is put in the agentive case, and the subject of a neuter or of a passive verb is put in the nominative or the accusative (objective) case. When, however, the active verb is intransitive, the subject is put in the nominative case. Moreover, when the subject, even of a transitive verb, is a pronoun emphatically used (as, for instance, with the particle  $\frac{1}{2}$  annexed to it), the subject is put in the nominative case. Further, when the subject is obviously the agent or instrument, as, for example, when the postposition  $\frac{1}{2}$  is expressly used with the objective, then it is not necessary, though quite allowable, for the subject to be put in the agentive case; in other words, it may appear in the nominative case.

Examples:--

মবালী মান্ত্রমার্থা The father loveth the son, or, The son is loved by the father.

বাদ্যান্ত্রিবালী মান্ত্রমার্থা বিশ্বালী The governor ordered the soldiers to attack.

অল্প্রান্থানি বিশ্বালী I am not rich.

ব্যাক্রান্ত্রমার্থানি বিশ্বালী I am going to court.

অল্প্রান্ত্রমার্থানি বিশ্বালী I can do nothing.

But what is a Passive Verb in Tibetan? How does the construction of the Passive Voice differ from that of the Active Voice? In a sense every Tibetan sentence, even when the verb is what we call Active, is permeated with the Passive idea. For, even such a sentence as ward and the father loveth the son, may be rendered equally correctly The son is loved by the father; for, literally translated, it is By the father, to, or as regards the son, a loving is. It practically therefore comes to this, that, when the subject is in the agentive case, the Active Voice is intended; but, when the subject of a transitive

verb is in the nominative or objective case, the Passive Voice is intended, unless some other structural peculiarity in the sentence indicates otherwise.

The same remarks hold as regards the Colloquial. The subject in the agentive case indicates the Active Voice; the subject in the objective (with or without A) indicates the Passive Voice. As a matter of fact, the Tibetan language strongly favours the agentive construction; and therefore the Passive Voice, or what passes as such, should be avoided as much as possible.

The Infinitive of the Passive Voice is, in Literary Tibetan, the same as the Participle Future of the Active Verb, i.e. the Future Root with the particle, e.g. 57 To be done.

In the Colloquial it is the Root with  $\mathfrak{F}$ , or  $\mathfrak{T}$  added. These, however, may also be used in Literary Tibetan.

#### VII.—COMPOUND VERBS.

In Literary Tibetan these are of several kinds.

(a) A Substantive combined with an Active Verb.

#### EXAMPLE:-

38.2552 To make a mistake, or commit a fault, i.e. to err. In such cases the Substantive remains constant, and \$5.2 is conjugated regularly as an Active 4-Rooted verb; Present Root \$5.7 Perfect \$5.7, Future \$5.7, Imperative \$5.7

(b) An Adjective in the Terminative case with  $\mathbf{x}^*$  combined with an Active Verb.

#### EXAMPLE :-

Terminative case remains constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated regularly, or according to its nature with reference to the Roots it possesses.

(c) A Principal Verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with combined with an Active Auxiliary Verb.

EXAMPLES:-

To permit to send.

To awake : To rouse.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the auxiliary is conjugated according to its nature.

(d) The Root of a Principal Verb put in the Terminative case with 5, 5, or 5, agreeably to the final letter of the Root, combined with a Causative Verb.

EXAMPLE:--

To bid to do.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

(e) The Present, Perfect, or Future Infinitive of a Principal Verb put in the Instrumental case and followed by the Root of an auxiliary.

EXAMPLES:-

दशमिर्देट नशक्ती।

I am allowed to send.

दश'य5द'यश'क्रेन्।

I was allowed to send.

द**श**'म्द्रिट'मश'र्केम्।

I shall be allowed to send.

Or, Present Infinitive of Principal Verb in Instrumental case, declining the auxiliary regularly in \(\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}, \mathcal{I} \)

Examples:—

मोर्नेट नशकेंगा मी भिर्

I am allowed to send.

मिर्देट महार केमा या ध्येत।

I was ,, ,, ,,

मोर्ट्र. यशः क्रुचा सर त्यीर or चेत्।

I shall be ,, ,, ,,

Here the auxiliary alone is conjugated.

(f) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of the Root of one verb added to the Root of another) combined with an Active Verb. EXAMPLE—not very idiomatic, but merely adduced by way of illustration:—

Here the two Roots remain constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated according to its nature.

(g) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of two Roots as above, combined with the Root of an Active Verb in the Terminative case with 5, 5 etc.), combined with a Causative Verb.

EXAMPLE:—

Here all except the Causative remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

In the Colloquial the Infinitive and the Root of a verb are never put in the Terminative case as they are in Literary Tibetan.

Moreover, the Infinitive may represent the Substantive or Noun as well as the Verb.

Hence, when the Infinitive, in form, is combined with an auxiliary verb, it may be regarded either as a Substantive or as a Verb.

Thus  $3 \times 1$  may mean either A mistake or To make a mistake: and hence the Colloquial phrase  $3 \times 1$   $3 \times 1$  may be rendered either To make a mistake or To mistake, To err.

However regarded, the tendency of Colloquial Tibetan, when a Substantive or a Verb is combined with an auxiliary verb, is to drop the Infinitive form of the verb, or the full form of the Substantive, and to use only the Root, though this is not always done.

For instance the Literary 되지 (5') 처리다 To arrange or prepare (literally To place in rows) is used Colloquially with 출기다, thus:— 피자 (or even 되) 월리 출기다

When, however, AT' To have, is the auxiliary, what looks like

a formal Infinitive is obviously a Substantive, e.g. 955 in 955 in 955.

IN To have a, or the, wish or desire, i.e. to wish or desire.

In short, the tendency to use the Root of the Principal Verb, or of the Substantive, holds, whether the auxiliary is an Active or a Causative Verb, though not where it is a verb like 📆 To have.

The ordinary Colloquial Honorific auxiliary verb is TAT' To be pleased, good enough, so kind as. It is combined either with Infinitives, or Roots followed by \$\overline{3}\$, or bare Roots.

EXAMPLES:-

उतिमर. (tot य.) चीबट.य।

To give.

क्ष्रापक्षयः मुंग्नित्य।

To return, or come or go back.

विमाशकर्ट्र मानदःय।

To desire.

VIII.—In Literary Tibetan VERBS OF BECOMING, GROWING, CHANGING, TURNING, GETTING, and the like, are often expressed with the aid of the auxiliaries ANT To become, etc. or ANT To go, the latter being the more modern. The noun or adjective governed by such auxiliary is put in the Terminative case, e.g. ANTANT or ANT To become a Lama; ANTANT OF ANTANT TO get rich. But sometimes the Literary Tibetan has in these cases a special verb, e.g. ANTANT To grow old.

The Colloquial, when it does not have a special verb, uses  $A_{\mathfrak{I}}^{\mathfrak{I}}$  and does not put the noun or adjective in the Terminative case.

EXAMPLE:-

युना रें। त्र्रें। प्र To get rich; but क्षाया To grow old.

IX.—INCEPTION is expressed in Literary Tibetan with the aid of the verb 그렇게지고 or 클레지 (Perfect Root 그렇게지 or 클레지 Future Root 기클레지 Imperative Root 크레지 or 클레지 To begin. It is used

with or without the prefixed word अभि When used as an auxiliary the construction is that described under Compound Verbs, No. VII.

The Colloquial equivalent is ( ) \( \sqrt{1} \) ) \( \sqrt{2} \) To begin, which when used as an auxiliary, may be combined either with the Infinitive or the Root (generally the Root) of the Principal Verb.

Inception may also be expressed by the verb next noticed.

X.—Imminence is expressed in Literary Tibetan (amongst other ways) by the verb ㅋㅋ٠٠ To be about to, To be on the point of, To be just going to. When used as an auxiliary the Principal Verb is generally put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

EXAMPLE:-

<u> たれ、なが、カナ・カーヨダ・たいかか</u>

I was about to write; or as I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4.)

In the Colloquial the same idea is expressed by means of the auxiliary verb  $abla \widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}^{\bullet} \mathcal{A}^{\bullet}$  To go, combined with the Root of the Principal Verb.

Examples:-

दशक्षः ने द्रिः द्र्ने क्ष्रिः । दशक्षः ने द्र्ने द्र्ने क्ष्रिः द्राक्ष्रि। वास्त्रात्मे क्ष्रिः द्र्ने द्र्ने क्ष्रिः ।

I am just about to write.

I was just about to write.

Yesterday I was just about to write.

XI.—In Literary Tibetan Verbal Continuatives are expressed with the aid of some adverb like 55 or 575 Always, Continually, Perpetually, or of a phrase like 55 55 55 55 Without ceasing.

Examples:-

मुँब-कर-भर-तर-भुँब-भम-वृत्व-हम। मुँब-कर-भर-तर-भुँब-भम-वृत्व-हम। He hopes on, keeps on hoping, hopes continually.

Go on rejoicing; Rejoice always. (1 Thess. v. 17.)

Pray on; keep on praying; Pray without ceasing. (1 Thess. v. 18.)

Colloquially they are formed by repeating the Root of the verb, with  $\Im$ ,  $\Im$ , or  $\Im$  added to each Root, and combining the whole with  $\Im$ 5.  $\Im$  To do, as an auxiliary.

EXAMPLES:--

[ [ कि का कि का कि का कि का कि का कि का eating. इये क दि मूर्गि में मूर्गि में मुक्ति or विश्व Go on reading this book. or मुर्थ ।)

## XII.—FINALITY OR COMPLETE ACCOMPLISHMENT.

In earlier Literature this is expressed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with  $\overline{\zeta}$ , and adding  $\overline{\beta}\overline{\zeta}$ , the Root of  $\overline{\beta}\overline{\zeta}$ . To be finished, and then conjugating regularly.

In later Literature the same construction is adopted, but, instead of  $\exists \xi$ , use is made of  $\xi \xi$ . Perfect Root of  $\xi \xi \xi$ . To be completed, terminated, finished, with or without the preceding adverbed. Wholly, Entirely.

The Colloquial custom is simply to add &: to the Root of the verb, and then conjugate regularly.

EXAMPLES:-

「本で、これで、一、「大田」では、「田」で

XIII.—Desideratives are expressed, both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial, with the aid of the auxiliary verbs 355 To wish, To desire, and 375 (the vulgar Colloquial form of which is 375) To wish, want, etc.

In Literary Tibetan 35537 is combined with the Infinitive of the

Principal Verb put in the Terminative case with  $\vec{x}$ , e.g.  $\vec{x}$  e.g.  $\vec{x}$   $\vec{y}$   $\vec{x}$   $\vec{y}$   $\vec{y}$ 

When 5 TS'S' or 5 TS' (which latter is never written) is used, the subject of course is put in the Dative case. Thus: in Literary Tibetan:—

८.ज.शहर.चर.रेच्था.श्री

I wish to see.

Or, in Colloquial:-

८.ज.शर्वट.च.रेच्रीश

Or :--

८.ज.शर्वर.रम्था.गी.जूर।

Or:-

८.ज.भर्तेर.रेस्.मी.स्र

Or :--

८.भद्रूट. मी. ५ रूरे ।

I wish to see.

An Intensive form of  $A\overline{5}5$ 'A' is  $A\overline{5}5$ 'A' To long, to yearn, to crave.

EXAMPLE:-

८ दें हे ब्रीट यत्में क्रीट वर्दे।

I long to go to Darjeeling.

Instead of ব্লুবেইন্ট্ৰ I wish to go, another Literary form is ব্লুবেইন্ট্ৰেম্ট্ৰ I have a desire for going, i.e. to go.

XIV.—FREQUENTATIVES may be formed, not by repeating the Root of the Verb, but by the Periphrastic Present.

EXAMPLE:-

म्रिंट.म्रिश्रश्र.चिट.ज.ट्रम्.ची.पर्नेचा.चीश्रा

Do you often go to Court (i.e. Law Courts)?

Or the adverb মুর্জমান্তার্কমান্ত Often, may be added. Thus:—.

XV.—Use of the PERFECT ROOT in the Colloquial.

When the Present Root of a Verb ends in an inherent W (e.g. 맞'다' To look), or in an inherent Q' (e.g. 직접 다 To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g. GT To request, to ask), or in (e.g. 357 To live, feed, nourish), that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in A was etc., the Present Participle, Periphrastic Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. Of course, it is quite allowable, and even proper, both when speaking and writing, and especially when writing the Colloquial, to use the Roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses. It is said, however, that as a matter of fact this is seldom or never done, at least in Vulgar Colloquial. It is also said that if, in the verbs above referred to, the Future is formed with WIT for all persons, instead of with A WIT etc., the Perfect Root should be used; and that for all other verbs the Colloquial usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any, for all moods and This is very doubtful, except perhaps in vulgar Colloquial. The idea, especially as connected with the Future Tense, probably arises from the fact that the Perfect Root often has the same, or nearly the same, sound as the Future Root. For instance, in the Verb \$\emptyset{755.5}\$ To send, the Perfect Root \$\pi\$55. and the Future Root স্চা sound alike or nearly alike. In this case, the better course would be to use \$155' instead of \$755' for the Future in \$155'. The best coarse would be to use the Roots properly, in all cases.

# CHAPTER III.

#### SYNTAX.

- § 39.—Most of what the student will desire to know under this head has already been dealt with in Chapter II, ETYMOLOGY, in connection with each of the different parts of speech, but a brief résumé of the main rules will doubtless be appreciated.
- 1.—Every Tibetan sentence is ordered thus: Subject, Object, Predicate.

EXAMPLES:-

८स-द्येक ५ रे जूनि ने भेर

I am reading this book.

C' or द'योई हे ब्रीद याद में दिनें श मुं I want to go to Darjeeling.

सदी (or दर्जे क्षेट दर्देर or दर्जे.

- 2.—As regards the component parts of the subject, or of the object, if the student thinks more or less backwards, he will get a very fair idea of the order in which they should be spoken or written. That order is as follows:—
  - (a) The principal substantive; unless it is qualified by an adjective in the genitive case, in which event the adjective comes first.
  - (b) The adjective when in any case other than the genitive.
  - (c) Participial clauses containing relative or correlative pronouns, and auxiliary to the principal substantive. These follow the rule of the adjective.
  - (d) The numeral, or the definite or indefinite article, and then the postposition.
  - 3.—Adverbs precede, and interrogative pronouns, immediately precede, the verb which they qualify or with which they are connected.
  - 4.—As regards the predicate, the verb comes last, every extension of the predicate preceding it. As regards the verb itself, the principal

verb comes first, either in the shape of an infinitive in the terminative case, or of a simple infinitive, or of a root, and then comes the active, suxiliary, or causative verb, these last alone being conjugated with reference to mood and tense.

5.—The general aspect of a Tibetan sentence, particularly if long and complex, is a series of subordinate clauses in a state of suspense, winding up with a definite statement.

EXAMPLE:---

And seeing the multitudes he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying.

But the literal Tibetan is:-

Then by him the crowds seeing, into the mountain having gone, having sat down, the disciples into his presence having come, by him mouth having opened, to them teaching was said.

# APPENDIX.

#### CONJUGATIONS.

Note.—These are intended for ready reference; and, to economize space, pronouns have been omitted, except at the beginning. plural is the same as the singular. They are not to be regarded as rigid, immutable expressions, but as forms which take on a moulding according to the structural necessities of the sentence.

I.—Colloquial W5'5" To be present; To exist; To be.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

E-W51

I am, or We are.

हिंद थेंद or बद्वा

Thou art, or You are.

मिं भें जिल्ला or भें जिल्ला मिं or it is, or They are.

Or, with an Indefinite signification:-WE' for all persons.

## Past.

Same as Present, context shewing Tense.

Or:-

८ स्पूर्य भेता I was.

ট্রি-অর্বা or occasionally অর্থাইর or (rarely, chiefly interrogatively) W5'4' W4! Thou wast.

मिंभेर् परेर or occasionally भेर्प्य प्रमा or rarely भेर्प्य भेर्। He was.

Imperfect: I was existing.) Perfect : I have existed. Pluperfect: I had existed. Same as Present, context shewing Tense; or as above form of Past.

# Future.

WE' for all persons: I shall exist.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If (so and so)....(then) I shall exist.

(Present Root).... The contract of the contrac

Past: If .... I would exist.

(Perfect Root).... ক ··· আঁহ্মান্ত্র and so on as in Past Tense.
Indicative Mood.

Or :-

(Perfect Root).... T. .... WT f. a. p. (- for all persons).

Perfect: If .... I would have existed.

(Perfect Root).... 3 or .... 3 or .... 3 f. a. p.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

ॲर् मुद्र or ॲर् मुद्र ॲट f. a. p.

Or :--

ल्र्य मुन्न कु ज्ये ।

२ प्रतिन्ति (or देन or rarely, chiefly interrogatively, भेद)।

অবি'রুব'শী'ইব' (or ব্রুদা or rarely অব)।

Past: I could exist.

२ प्राप्त क्षा f. a. p.

Or:--

ર્પેર્યુવપાં ખેત્ | and so on, as in Past Indicative.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist; I may exist; It is likely, etc.

मर्डमा द्वीराब प्रस्ता f. a. p.

Or :-

ऑट में भेर यात्र । f. a. p.

Or :-

भेट में भेद में (or दमें)। f. a. p.

Past: I might exist.

দার্ত্বান্ত্রির তেই বার্মার। and so on, as in Past Indicative.

Or :--

महिमानुद्देन पर्ने or दर्मा f. a p.

Or :--

ळॅर (or त्रुमा) यथिरयत्र्। f. a. p.

र्थेर (or तर्ना) यथिरम् or त्मा। f a. p.

### HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

พีรุรุศิล | f. a. p., or พีรุรุศิล พีร | f. a. p.

Or:-

অঁহ হল্ মানু এব। and so on, as in Indicative Present of Colloquial অব্যা

Or vulgarly:-

સ્ત્ર-દ્વાના પાસ્ત્ર and so on, as next above.

Past: I ought to have existed.

ইম্ব্রাম্ম্র্রা and so on, as in Indicative Past

Or :--

ឃីና'5ବିଛା'ଗୁମ'| f. a. p.

Or vulgarly:-

ম্ব্ৰিম্ম্ৰ and so on, as in Indicative Past, but with T instead of

#### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: That, or In order that, or So that I may or might exist.

พีรุ: ชุลิ รัฐ ณ f. a. p.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Be; exist.

वुदः, or ऒ्र्यार्वेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः, or ऒ्र्यावेशः,

If Attributive only, then বুঁঝ', or বুঁঝ' (Coll.), or বুঁই' or দুঁঝ', or মাইব।

Prohibitive : མ་འབྱུང་, or མ་ (ལོད་པ་) བགྱུད་, or མ་ (ལོད་པ་) མ੬ད། f. a. p.

Note.— उँना, or रॅनाश गुँद, or रॅनाश निद्र, or रूट, or आ may be added according to rule.

## PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me exist.

অব্যাত্ত (with or without উদা etc.) f. a. p.

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

I may exist; I am allowed to exist.

भेर्र केना f. a. p.

Or:-

ल्रें क्रिया मी ल्रेंद।

ॲंर केंग मी ॲर or पर्ना

व्यद्भानी व्यद्भा or व्यद्भा or व्यद्भानी व्यद्भानी

(This last may be conjugated on, according to mood and tense.)

#### OPTATIVE.

Oh that I existed; Would that I existed.

चेंद्र वेंचा, or चेंद्र दार्वेच। f. a. p.

#### PARTICIPLES.

Present: ৺১খা

Existing: Being.

Past:

व्यद्भा

Existed: Been.

Com. Perfect: অস্থান্দ্র

Having existed: having been

Future: Ā드黃, or Ā드黃! About to exist or be.

# PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

Wistales | Who or which exists or existed.

W5.71 Which exists or existed.

ऑट में (or ऑट मुं) अनिव । Who is to, or will, exist.

ऑट मुं (or ऑट कुं) अंद यह। Which is to, or will, exist.

लूट, (or लूट, मैं.) री

Ditto.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

Ψ̃5 ਫੋਟ | As, since, because, etc. ... exists, exist.

ऑर.तपु.रश्चा

At the time of existing; when, while .... exists, exist.

মিন্ব In or by existing; if, when, .... exists, exist.

স্থিত্ৰ Existing.

মৃত্যুম। Though, because existing.

चित्रं प्रति देन मा For existing.

### Past.

 $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ ' $\mathsf{55}$ ' As, since, because, when, after, etc. . . . existed.

ल्र्ट.च.जश

র্মের্'শূম। Though, because .... existed.

VERBAL NOUNS.

ळॅर्यं, or ॲर्यरे।

The existing.

SUPINES.

भेर्प, or भेर्मु।

To exist; To be.

ळॅर्'यदे'र्देब'य।

**भॅरक्ट्वे**देर्या

व्यन्यदे नेवया

For existing; For being.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

व्यद्भा

To exist : To be.

ळॅर्याधेद्य।

To have existed; To have been.

ऑट मुं (or ऑट मुं) अन्य। To be about to exist.

N.B. - Wラコ may always be used for ゆうコ but ゆうコ may not be used for ゆうコ

II.—LITERARY 📆 To exist; To be present; To be.

(N.B.—The forms in Q = = = only used when that verb is being used as a mere copula.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I exist; I am existing; I am present; I am.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Or, elegantly but rather obsoletely:

८.भकुश।

I exist.

हिरम्परा

Thou existest.

मिंद्र अकेश, or महत्, or अकेश या भेत्। He exists.

Or respectfully:-

न्द्रमा ॲर्।

```
BY: NEG 1
   प्रिट्य विषया, or श्रद्ध, or ब्रह्मिश्राया क्रिया
N.B.
    মুক্তমান্ত্ৰ is an elegant form for অন্ত্ৰা
    मरिया ,, ,, ,, ,, तर्माया
    এন্মর্মান ,, ,, ,, ,, ১, ১, ১, ১,
    মনেবে ,, a respectful ,, ,, স্বিব
    चल्नाश्रासः ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,,
    Past: I existed.
    (Same as in Colloquial.)
    Or :--
    ॲर्यरमुरर्हे। f. a. p.
    Or:-
    সুমর্গ্রি f. a. p. I was....
    Or :--
ર્પેર વર વાર પાંચે and so on, as in second form of Indicative Past of
    Literary 4541
    Or :--
चीर.त.लूर।
                                   Ditto.
     Imperfect: I was existing.
     (Same as Present, context showing tense.)
     Perfect: I have existed; Pluperfect: I had existed.
     (Same as Past.)
     Future: I shall exist.
```

त्मुर र्रे। f. a. p. I shall be....

ឃុំ ተቋቋቋ ነ f. a. p.

Or :--

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If..... I shall exist.

(Present Root) ... . (any Future form as above).

Past: If.....I would exist.

(Perfect Root) ত্র ভের্মির আব so on.

Or :--

ে ব । অবি বাম শুম বা औत्। and so on.

Or :-

"ব্ৰাম্পুৰা and so on. I would be...

Or :--

ं दः भेर्परमुद्राहें। f. a. p

Or:-

ं नुराहि। f. a. p I would be....

Perfect: If....I would have existed.

(Perfect Root) " र्ज " र्ज्जून, or " तुना, or " तुना, f. a. p.

Or :--

ं काd so on.

Or :-

''ব্ বুম্ম্ম্ and so on. I would have been.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

พีร : ปราสุ**ส**าสัง f. a. p.

Past: I could exist.

ऑर-यर-**ब्**रायाधेव।

ইত্যান্ত্রা বাবিদ্যাল or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively, ইব্যান্ত্রা ক্রিয়ান্ত্রা ক্রেয়ান্ত্রা ক্রিয়ান্ত্রা ক্রেয়ান্ত্রা ক্রিয়ান্ত্রা ক্রিয়ান্

Perfect: I could have existed.

**चेंद** प्राया केंद्र। and so on.

### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist: I may exist.

शुः विश्वा प्रभित्र समायमुम्पर्मे [ f. a. p.

Or :--

พีร : มร : ลีร : รัฐ f. a. p.

Or :--

ॲ५:धर:५५ुमार्मे f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would exist: I might exist.

য়' দ্বীমা''' স্মির্'মার' শুরু and so on.

Or :--

Or :--

शुःवेश ॱ ॲर्पर चुर रें। f. a. p.

Perfect: I would have existed: I might have existed.

য়ৢ৽ঀয়৽৽৽ড়ৼয়ৼড়ৢৼ৽য়ড়ৼ। and so on.

Or :-

र्भेर्-यर-श्रेर्-य-भेर्। and so on.

## HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

พัร นร ร**ุศัล**ร์ชั่ or พัร นร ฐ | f. a. p.

Past: I must have existed; ought to have existed.

র্মির বেম বৃদ্ধির प्रिय । and so on.

### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might exist.

ॲर्यरप्तुरप्ति धुरा f. a. p.

Or :-

ઑંદ'ਰੂં વૈ' ফুঁহ | f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

प्रभूमा विमा or भेरिःसरमुरःसम्। Exist.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me etc., exist.

ळॅर्-र्-ु-रुमा-रुमा or ळॅर्-धर-रुमा-रुमा। f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to exist.

स्ट्रांस्थ केमा में। f. a. p.

Or:-

Past: I was allowed to exist.

स्रिन्यशक्तिन्य भेतृ। and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to exist.

ॲंद्रपश्चेनाधरादगुरारें। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I might exist.

 전국·리국·ŋ국·경·昭仁' |

 Or :—

 전국·리국·취취·충례 |

 Or :—

 전국·경·청·청·청·다 |

PARTICIPLES.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Periphrastic Expressions:—

Same as in Colloquial. Also:—

ळॅर्नेर्सम्बर or ळॅर्नेर्नेर्सर्से।

He who exists or existed.

ॲ५:वेुर्य।

That which exists or existed.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present: Existing.

२ वित्ता क्रिया क्रिय

Past: Having existed.

ळॅर्'रे', ळॅर'यश, ळॅर'वश, ळॅर'य'यश, ळॅर'य'र्रा'। etc.

VERBAL NOUN.

ळॅर्य or ळॅर्यके।

Existing, To exist.

SUPINE.

र्षेर्'यर' or र्षेर्'रु ।

To exist.

Infinitives.

(As in Colloquial.) Also:-

ल्रेर.तर.पंचीर.घ।

To be about to exist.

N.B.— ઋદ્રા may always be used instead of ઋદ્રા, but ઋદ્રા may never take the place of ઋદ્રા when the latter means To be present, To exist.

III.—Colloquial 🛱 🏋 To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

ऋद.

I am.

ন্ত্ৰ্ or occasionally ইচ্; or rarely, chiefly interrogatively খাব্য

Past: I was.

Imperfect: I was being. Same as Present, context showing

Perfect: I have been.

Pluperfect: I had been.

Future: I shall be.

Or:-

...मिष्पेत्।

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If ... I shall be.

(Present Root with "followed by either of above Future forms.)

Past: If .... I would be.

(Perfect Root) ত্র্যাস্থ্র

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ... J. W.T. f. a. p.

Perfect: If .... I would have been.

(Perfect Root) ত্রাম্ব্র and so on.

Or :—

(Perfect Root) "5" or "55" or "55" each f. a. p., save that 55" is confined to 1st person.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be. খার স্থাবা or খার স্থাবা আন। f. a. p. Past: I could be.

ध्रिद्धा f. a. p. context showing Tense.

Or :-

ਹੁੱਟ ਬੁਹ। f. a. p.

Or:—

শ্বির্বাশ্বের। and so on.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present and Past: I may or might be; Perhaps I shall or would be.
মার্ডিনা ট্রাইন্ড অনি | f. a. p.

Or ·—

พี่ เพิ่ง เลา p. ชัง เลา p.

Or:-

ऑट मी भेर में। f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

**Present**: I ought to be: I must be.

भेद द्वीश f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been; must have been.

ম্প্র্রা for 1st person, others taking ব্রুমা।
PURPOSIVE MOOD.

In order that I may or might be.

भेदायदे देवाया f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

तुँस, मुँस, तुंद, or तुंस।

Be.

मःनुर।

Do not be.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

भेद-चर्डमा | f. a. p. with हैना or दूर or ध्रा or देनाहा ने देन or

### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

ध्येद केंग् | f. a. p.

Or :--

धोद केंगा मा भेर। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to be.

भेद'र्केम्'र्शेद'। f. a. p.

Or :--

धोद केंग याधीद। and so on.

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were: Would that I were.

भेद: वेचा or भेद:य: वेच। f. a. p.

# PARTICIPLES.

Present:

শ্বশ্

Being.

Past:

लेब्स ।

Been.

Com. Perfect:

व्य-य-भेद-य।

Having been.

Future:

लूट.मी. वर लूट.मी।

About to be.

# PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

भेद्रयः or भेद्रयदे।

Who or which is or was.

লুट.ची.প্রানধ।

ऄॅट'कुं'रे

लूट.च्री.शाय

ॲंट मूं दे

Who or which will be, or is or are to be.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

#### Present.

धेदरश। At the time of being; when, while .. am, is, भेदायदे द्राया ই্মব্র By, if, when . . am, is, are. ರ್ಷ or ಭಿನ'ಕ್ಷ.! As, since, because..am, is, are. र्भेदत्य। Being. र्भेद्रयम्। As..am, is, are. लेब यहै। Of or for being. Past.

भेद:रूख। When, while .. was, were. श्रेष्यदे द्राय। लेब्स्यल।  $As \ldots was, were.$ প্রব:বহা Having been; as, since, when, because প্রব্যথা लुब-दा-प्रश्न । W4:4:45 As, since, because, when ... was, were. **र्यट**। लुब.ब्रट.।

VERBAL NOUN.

Being; The being; To be.

SUPINES.

ଭିବ୍ୟ । ଭିବ୍ୟ । ଭିବ୍ୟ ।

INFINITIVES.

N.B.— พืจน is only a copula, and may not be used for พืจน,
but พัจน may be used for พิจน

Moreover, it must always be remembered that Wat, whether Colloquial or Literary, is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or substantive or auxiliary verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

IV.—LITERARY WATI To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am.

ম্প্র (ব্র)।

ম্ব্র (ব্র)।

ম্ব্র (ব্র)।

ম্ব্র (ব্র)।

Or, honorifically:—
(Not used: ordinary মার্ with বাব্দা instead of দি) |

শাব্দা (মা) or মানুমানামার (ব্রি) |

Past: I was.

Same as first Present form, context showing Tense.

Or :---

रस्थि (वे)।

েন্দ্ৰ্ (মৃ) or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively এব। ... राज्येद (व्)।

Imperfect: I was being.

Perfect:

I have been

Same as first Present form, context showing Tense; or same

Pluperfect: I had been.

Future:

 $I\ shall\ be.$ 

... वर दबुर: (र्रे)। ...धर.४**ची**र. (<u>र</u>ू)।

... रॉर.प.बुर. (र्रे)।

CONDITIONAL AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present: If .... I shall be.

...ब्...व्यूर. (र्हे)। f. a. p. (Present Root)

If ....I would be. Past:

ं जुरायाधीन (वि)। and so on. (Perfect Root)

Or :--

''ব্" শুহ দি a. p.

Perfect: If.... I would have been.

and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be.

พีส ฐี ( วั ) | f. a. p.

Or :--

लेक्सर वृद्धः (र्ह्स)।

Past: I could be.

ध्येत. विया त्या है वि । and so on.

Or:-

धेद'यर'वृक्ष'य'धेद' (र्वे) | and so on.

Perfect: I could have been.

पेत् पुरासंभित् (र्हे)। and so on.

Or :-

भैब्रायर बुद्धाय भेंदर  $(\tilde{\zeta})$ । and so on.

Or :--

भेश ब्रुयः श्रॅटः (टॅं.)। f. a. p.

Or :-

ਅੰਗ-ਸ਼ਣ-ਰੋਬ-ਹੈਵ. (<u>ट</u>.)। t. a. b.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: I may be; Perhaps I shall be.

श्चित्रा... वर. (or ... तर. or ... ग्रूर.) प्रवीर. (रू)। f. a. b.

Or :--

भेदाराश्चेत् (र्रे)। f. a. p.

Or :--

भेदारादर्मा (में)। f. a. p.

Past: I might be: Perhaps I would be.

মু'ঐম''' বহ' ( or '' বহ' or '' বহ') শুহ'বাখীর' ( র ) | and so on.
Or :—

भेद-धर-शेर-धार्भद (दें)। and so on.

Perfect: I might have been: Perhaps I would have been.

शुः वेशः .. नर (or ... धर or र्वरः) गुराया र्वरः (र्रे)। and so on.

Or :--

भेदायर् श्रीराया भेरा (र्रे)। and so on.

## HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must be; I ought to be.

Past: I must have been; I ought to have been.

भेदाराम् प्राप्ति (दि) | and so on.

Or:-

भेदार-प्रोशनुदः (देः)। f. a. p.

Or :-

भेद'यर'उट'य'भेद' (दें) | and so on.

Or :-

ध्येद्र'यदि 'देण्य'य'ध्येद' (दें)। and so on.

## PURPOSIVE MOOD.

In order that I may or might be.

णेब्रायराय्चीरायप्रे. केर. (र्रे), or क्षेत्र. रें, or र्रेब्रायां f. a. p. or:—

ឃុំក្រុង្ខិត ( རྡོ) l f. a. p.

"' 디자' (or 디자' or '' 5' or '' 5' or '' 정' or '' 5') 유멸자' 다.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

भेदायर दुवा रेम। f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

भेदायशकेंग (में)। f. a. p.

Or :-

धेद प्रश्र केंगा में भिंद (दि)। and so on throughout.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Would that I were; Oh that I were

মৌর'নাম'নীম'রুমা। f. a. p.

VERBAL NOUN.

धेद्य or धेद्यदी। Being; The being; To be.

SUPINE.

भेदरार or भेदर्। Tc be.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: 백학자 Being. 최학자 Not being.
Past: 백학자 Been. 해학자 Not been.

Com. Perfect · พัร น พิสุน | Having been. มิรุนพิสุน | Not having been.

Future: Ā도편 or Ā도편! About 라진드편 or 和英도편! Not about to be.

## PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

धेवयः or धेवयः दे or वै।

ऑट कुं अमिन हैं or नै।

ल्लाम्बर्गः or है।

...रनुषरे or वै।

प्रतिकृति or दे।

अंदर्भें रे or वै।

…スタロラ or 引

Who or which is or was.

Who will be, or is or are to be.

Which will be, or is or are to be.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

## Present.

পূৰ্মণ্ড বুজান। পূৰ্মণ্ড বুজান।

लुब्दाया ।

प्येद दे।

भूथ.बुट. I

भेवन।

प्रदाय।

প্যথ-দ্ৰীধা

लेब यह ।

At the time of being; when, while, as .. am, is, are.

Being: as, since, when, after, while .. am, is, are.

In or by being; if, when .. am, is, are.

Being.

Though, since, because ... am, is, are.

Of or for being.

#### Past.

শ্বন্ধ। শ্বন্ধ।

প্রব্রহার।

Having been; as, since, when, after ... was, were.

Because, since, when...was, were.

지국 지지 As ... was, were.

지국 지지 
After, since, because, when .. was, were.

지국 지국 
If, when ... was, were.

## INFINITIVES.

 때국'리|
 To be.

 때국'리'지기
 To have been.

 때국'리국'리기
 To be about to be; going to be.

 때국'리국'리기
 To be about to be; going to be.

V.— \(\tilde{\mathbb{H}}\sumsymbol{\tau}\) To have; To possess.

Same as Colloquial or Literary \$\tilde{\mathbb{A}}^\* \tau To be present, To exist, save that it is conjugated with the subject in the Dative case with \$\tau^\*\$. Thus:—

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I have; I possess.

E.W. 7

To me there is.

हिँदायाद नुमा

To thee there is.

मिंता सेंद्र or त्रुम or स्दिपारेंद्र। To him there is.

And so on throughout.

VI.—Active, Transitive, 4-rooted Colloquial verb.

मॉर्डिट To send.

#### ROOTS.

Present: निर्दे Perfect: निर्दे Future: निर्दे Imperative: निर्दे

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I send.

दशःमोर्टेटः।

मुँदःगुसम्बद्धः।

मिश्रमिर्देटः।

Periphrastic Present: I am sending.

दशमिर्देट मी भेर

हिंद्र-गुरुष-मोर्देट-मी: भेदः or बद्ना।

विश्वामित्रः मी र्थितः or ब्रुमा or र्थित्यः रेत्।

N.B.—Pronouns are henceforth omitted, except where necessary to make the construction clear.

The construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

Past: I sent.

755' f. a. p.

Or :-

यर्ट्य प्रम

স্ক্রের্ম or occasionally ইন্ or rarely (interrogatively) এব।

यहदायारेत ,, ,, यहुमा ,, ,, थेव।

Or :--

٦٩٢٠ f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense; or \$75.7.44 and so on, as in Past.

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

न्त्राक्षाचित्र

বহুদ্ধেষ্টিহ্ or এইুনা

वर्टान्द्रसच्चेर or वर्ना or च्येरचारेर।

Future: I shall send.

मॉर्न्ट (or मान्ट) थेटिं। f. a. p.

Or :---

मोर्ट्रमी भी

मार्देर मी परुमा or रेड or धेव।

महिंदि:मी:देर or पर्मा or ध्येत्।

Or :--

নাচ্চা I am (or have) to send.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If....I shall send.

(Present Root) ייק ייק (or אָן בְּרָי) שָׁבִין f. a. p.

Or:--

(Present Root) "বৃদ্ধি নামিব। and so on.

Past: If ... I would send.

(Perfect Root) তেওঁ সহলেম্প্র and so on.

Or:--

(Perfect Root) "즉" 되었다 (or 찍었다) 때다 f. a. p.

Perfect: If .... I would have sent.

Or:-

(Perfect Root) "4" 755 WT or 755 75 m or 755 35 f.a.p.

except that  $\Im \Gamma$  is usually confined to the first person, and  $\Im \Im$  used with the others.

### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send; am able to send.

মার্টিরের বা f. a. p.

Or:--

मोर्नेट **मृ**तः भेटा | f. a. p.

Or :---

महिंदाश्याणुः स्पृत्। and so on.

Past: I could send.

मिर्नेट श्रुव या भेद। and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

ন্দি: ধ্বন' মেন্। and so on.

Or :--

मिर्नेट श्रुय यात्र ना। f. a. p.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall send; I may send; It is likely that I shall send.

শ্রিণ্ট্র্'ব্' ... (Either form of Simple Future).

Or :-

महिंद मी भीत सार र ! f. a. p.

Or:

मार्नेट्र मी प्रीक्ष स्मा | f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I should send; I might send.

मारेग नेर ज प्राप्त भेता and so on.

Or :---

माठेमा नेद त . . मोर्नेट ऑट । f. a. p.

Or:-

मन्द्रायाय प्रमा f. a. p.

Or :--

ਸ5 द प्रायमित के हो। f. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have sent; I might have sent.

मारुमा ने देन : ने किया ने कार्य so on.

Or :--

न्द्राच व्याप्त वा f. a. p.

Or :--

न्दर न स्प्रेर दर्ने | f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD

**Present**: I must send: I ought to send

... त्रामित्र प्रमित्र f. a. p.

Or :--

··· अमिदि द्विश गुः भेद। and so on.

Or :-

... भाषाहित द्वाहा गु : ध्वेद | and so on.

Or vulgarly:

…ผากักราลา๊ันาโลา and so on.

Also the following, sometimes used: --

...अमार्ट्स्थारेर्।

I am (or have) to send.

…四四55以子**1** 

Thou art (or hast) to send.

...a.4125.m.z.

He is (or has) to send.

Past: I must have sent; ought to have sent.

" अन्तर्हित्र मिंहा ( or vulgarly हमें न ) भेद | and so on.

Or :--

••• भार्ने द्वारा द्वारा है। a. p., except that द्वारा is usually confined to the 1st person, and द्वारा used with the others.

## PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may send.

महिंद प्रदेश रि. a. p.

Past: In order that I might send.

ব5८'বর ব্রিমা f. a. p.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD

र्रोट or महिंद | Send.

N.B.—বিশা (commonly but improperly ঠিনা), or ইনামান্ত্র, or হ্নামান্ত্র, or হ্নামান্ত্র, or হা, may be added according to rule. মান্ত্রি or vulgarly মান্ত্র। Do not send.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

दश.चोर्टूट.चखना (कुचा.)।

ब्रिंद्र-गुर्श्यानिंद्रः चर्यमाः ( द्वनाः)।

म्रिंगम्ट्रिट्रिंग्स्युवाः (स्रमाः)।

N.B.—The construction here is, "By me (or thee or him) a sending permit"

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send; I may send.

८८ महिंद केंग। f. a. p., or महिंद केंग में भेंद। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send; I might send.

दशःमिर्देटः केविंग्दाः भेति | and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

दशःमिर्देट:क्रेमि:ऑट: | f. a. p.

Or:-

दश महिंद केंग में भिंद | and so on.

N.B.—Here the construction is, "A sending by me is allowed, or was allowed, or will be allowed."

The following is more Bookish:-

८श.मोर्टेट.चश.क्रेम।

I may send.

विर्'गीशमिर्ट पशकेंग।

Thou mayest send.

मिरामिर्दि परार्थे केन।

He may send.

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.

दशमोर्देट सेना or दशमोर्देट य सेना।

Or. better:—

दशमार्नेट व देनायाखा

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

दश्चन्द्रः विमा or चन्द्रः च विमा

Or, better:--

दश्यन्द्रमादाखा।

#### PARTICIPLES.

Present:

মার্ন্ন যে।

Sending.

Perfect:

75C.71

Sent.

Com. Perfect : সহমেপ্রমা

Having sent.

Future:

मॉर्नेट 'द्रमें' or मार्नेट 'द्रमें' भेर दा | } About to send.

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC.

महिंदासाम्बद or महिंदान रे or महिंदान रें। He who sends.

यन्द्रायम् or यन्द्रायाने।

He who sent.

Or the following constructions may be used :-

See regarding Active and Periphrastic Participles generally, § 38, V. D.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL. EXPRESSIONS.

### Present.

मॉर्नेट:धे।	Sending.
मिर्देट यस ।	Sending; Because, since, when, whilesending.
मिर्दिः स्था	Sending; at, for, though sending.
निर्देट मिश्र।	Though, $because$ $sending$ .
महिंद्र माथ ।	${\it As, sincesending.}$

मार्ट्समार्ट्स्य। Whilst sending. If, when, though..send, sending. etc., etc. Past. 25C.81 Having sent. カケハカダー Sent; because, since, when . . sent. 25C.421 Having sent. 15C.1.4x1 यरट.मुझ। Because, though ... sent. If, when, though ... sent. 755.41 755.7.41 As, since, because, having... sent. 25C'2'5C' **455.4.441** etc., etc. SUPINES. मर्दिर:य। महिंदिन्तुं। मार्टराय। गर्रिट थ। महिंदानि देशिया For sending.गर्नेट कुरि देन त्या

गर्दे: यदे देव थ।

# VERBAL NOUNS.

गर्नेट्र म	
मिर्देट मारे ।	Sending; the sending; a sending.
मिर्हिट थ।	J
755.4	)
מקבים לן	The having sent.
गर्ने मुं	
শ্যু ।	
गर्ने-कु-२।	The being about to send.
मात्र-'र्मु'रे।	

# Infinitives.

Present:	महिंदःच ।	To send.
Perfect :	קקבים ן	To have sent.
	<b>ロ5になべり</b>	
	नर्दायधेक्य।	
	नर्ट सेंर्च।	
Future:	म्।	To be about to send, or to be sent.
	मिर्देट कुं प्येद य ।	
	म्।	
	मार्ट वर्गे अर्थ	
	महिंदःम्नयः धेवः य।	

VII.—Active, Transitive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 55555.

#### Roots.

Present: 455' Perfect: 455' Future: 페5C. I

Imperative: ब्रिंट or महिंद विमा

N.B.—Pronouns are omitted, but the construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

The STATE or placed over the reduplicated final consonant, or final vowel of a verb, is also omitted.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I send.

মার্নি: f. a. p.

Or, Intensively:—

ਸੀੱ ਨੇ ਪ੍ਰਤਾ ਸ਼੍ਰੇਤ | f. a. p.

Periphrastically:—

मार्नेट मोद छेर।

मोर्डेट मीद प्रेंड or पर्मा

मोर्नेद मीब स्पेर or बर्मा or स्पेर या रेर्।

Elegant but obsolete form :-

मार्नेट प्रिक्र सकेश।

मार्ट्र मिलेश मारत।

मोर्टेट.चलेब.शकुश. or मार्टेट. or शकुश.दा.लुब।

Or :—

Same, substituting ar for say

Or, Respectfully:—

नदमामिर्देरमिक्स्पर्

ष्ट्रिन् मोर्ट्र मोरास्त्र ।

म्रिट्स मेरिट मोर्बियोश. or श्राटन. or नर्बियोश तान्त्रेय।

I am

Thou art sending.

He is

Past: I sent.

**习5**に f. a. p.

Or :--

75E.7.Mg 1

বহুমেন্ত্র্না or occasionally and chiefly interrogatively মধ্

यर्टाय अद्

Or:--

755' NE' | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, the context showing Tense.

Or :-

ন্দ্ৰ মাধ্য and so on, as in Past.

Or :--

यहर विर्टेश प्राप्त में f. a. p.

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.

Same as Past, or :-

٩5٢٠¾٢٠١

नर्टार्भेर or पर्ना।

यहर स्पेर or बर्म or स्रामा

Also, but seldom used, and only at end of sentences:—

नर्दाक्राचित्

यर्टा व्हार्थेट. or पर्वा

यद्रम् अभितः or प्रदेशः or लूर्यः इरी

Future: I shall send.

지5다 f. a. p.

Or :--

विदेश वर त्युर | f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्डे:'यर'नु | f. a. p.

Or:--

नाइट ऑट | f. a. p.

And note the following:-

चार्टाक्युःश्वर

I am (or have) to send.

মান্ত্রমূত্র্মা or interrogatively অন্য Thou art (or hast) to send.

मार्ट्स कुं भेदा

He is (or has) to send.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

**Present**: If...I shall send.

(Present Root) ... f. : (any of the above Future forms), f. a. p.

Past: If... I would send.

Same as Present, save that in the Introductory Clause the Perfect Root is used: or:—

(Perfect Root) ত্রত্ত ব্যাহ্র and so on.

Perfect: If.. I would have sent.

Same as Past.

Or :-

(Perfect Root) "5" 555 5 and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send.

मिहिंद् चुन | f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद वर वृद्ध। f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद: बुरा स्प्रेटः। f. a. p.

Past: I could send.

मॉर्नेट मुन सेंट । f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट पर दुश सिंट | f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद मुन या भेद। and so on.

Or :—

महिंद प्र कुशाया भीता and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

मिर्देट मुदादा भेद। and so on.

Or :---

मोर्नेट पर त्राया भेरी and so on.

# PROBABILITY.

Present: I may send; Perhaps I shall send.

ह्य-वेश "नाइट" | f. a. p., or नाइट थेटि | f. a. p.

Or :--

शुः वेश ः नोर्ट्र वर त्रमुर | f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्देट वर होत्। f. a. p.

Or .-

मॉर्नेट र्श्ने र | f. a. p.

Past: I might send.

मार्नेट श्रेद दा भेद। and so on.

Or :--

As in Past Tense, Potential Mood.

Perfect: I might have sent.

मार्नेट श्रुदा श्रेट । f. a. p.

Or:-

महिंद्युन पार्भेद् | and so on.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट र्शेन्ट पार्थित्। and so on.

# HORTATIVE.

Present: I ought to send: I must send.

··· यमिर्दियर दमिश f. a. p.

Or:-

मॉर्नेट पर पुते । f. a. p.

Or :--

Past: I ought to have sent.

শেনার্নির বংশ্বীশ্বামীর। and so on.

# PURPOSIVE MOOD.

So that I may send, or might send.

मिर्देट मदि देव दु। मिर्देट मदि देव द्या मिर्देट मदि स्वीकर दु।

Each f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

मार्टेट.रे.कैंची. or चोबेट.। Or:— मार्टेट.चर.कैंची. or चोबेट.।

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send: I may send.
নাইন্দ্ৰমান্ত্ৰী if. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्दि न्यूश केना नी भेरि। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send: I might send.

महिंद्र प्रशास्त्रमा था भेद | and so on.

Or :-

मार्रेट प्रशास्त्रमा भारती and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

नारट नशक्ता

Or :---

मिर्देर प्रशास्त्रिमा प्रस्ति व. p.

Or:—

महिंद: नशः केंमा धर: नु | f. a. p.

# OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.
নান্দ্ৰেন্ৰ

Or :--

मार्नेट नर विमा रेग। f. a. p.

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

मिर्दे पर मुर्च अद । f. a. p.

Or :—

र्यंत्रः प्रेम् रेम्। f. a. p.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD.

र्शेट.।

र्शेट...विमा

मार्नेट.।

अवार्य

अवार

अवा

N.B.  $\longrightarrow$  is not used with  $\searrow$   $\Longrightarrow$ 

#### PARTICIPLES.

मार्टिया Sending. Present: קקבים ו **455.47.41** Perfect: Sent. **マラ**に、多ずな! אַר:אַר:אַ

Com. Perfect : สุรุตุลุพิสุธา Having sent.

> चर्ट्रिट वर द्वीर व। חַלְבִימִגיַם ו

Future: About to send. मर्देर छ।

महिंद्र पर मा अक्षाय।

42C... MAG |

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

मार्टेट स्मामन्। मोर्टेट ग्रेंद स्मामन। He who sends; the sender; the sending मर्हिट यार्थे। person. मर्देट नुर्य। मर्देर मेर यारी। He who sent. The sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used :-

See generally, § 38, V. D.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS. As in Colloquial.

VERBAL NOUN, OR ADJECTIVE.

되 Sending; a or the sending.

지 The having sent.

지 The having sent.

지 The having sent.

지 The being about to send.

지 The being about to send.

SUPINES.

महिंद मदे हैं ।

महिंद मदे हैं ।

महिंद मदे हैं ।

महिंद मदे हैं र ।

महिंद मदे हैं र ।

# INFINITIVE MOOD.

 Present : 리투드리 | To send.

 지투드리 | 

 지류 |

VIII.—Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb माद्राया, माद्रीयां माद्रायां, माद्रीयां माद्रायां, माद्रीयां प्रकार

#### Roots.

# As in Active Verb No. VI.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Objective or Accusative case, with or without A!

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am being sent.
নাইন্নাইড়া

महिंद्रामी स्पेर or पर्ना or स्पर्धारी

Past: I was sent.

यरदायाः भेद।

קקב'אוֹב' ן f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was being sent.

Same as Present, but with adverb or other context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have been sent.

ন্দ আনু and so on.

Or, same as Past.

Or the following, though seldom used save at end of sentence:

755.58.W51 and so on.

Pluperfect: I had been sent.

Same as Perfect.

Future : I shall be sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If..I shall be sent.

Past: If..I would be sent.

Perfect: If.. I would have been sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

#### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be sent.

Past: I could be sent.

Perfect: I could have been sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: I may perhaps be sent.

Past: I might, ,, ,,

As in Active Verb No. VI.

## HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.
ন্দ্ৰেন্স্স্ন্ত্ৰি and so on.

Or :--

यहदःदमें अःगीः भेद। and so on.

Or :-

ব5 দেবী হা f. a. p.

Or :---

यर्ट र्मेश स्टा f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

यहर द्र्योश धर्मेष् and so on.

Or:-

वर्दा कार्य so on.

#### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may be sent.

As in Active Verb

Past: In order that I might be sent.

No. VI.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

মার্নি (or মার্না) নির্দাণ Let me, etc., be sent.

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be sent.
নাইন (or নাইন) ক্রিনানা মাইন and so on

And so on conjugating 3714 regularly.

Or :--

मार्देट' (or प्रदूर') केंगा f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOT.

**Present**: Oh that I were being sent.

티토 (디') - 역기 f. a. p.

Or, better:

मिर्नेट के के नाया था। f. a. p.

Past: Oh that I had been sent.

다. (다.) 선체 f. a. p.

Or, better:-

यर्ट केम् या हा व. p.

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

Being sent.

Past:

Seen sent.

Com. Perfect: 5557 W Having been sent.

Future:

নার্ন্ ।

নার্দ ন্যু ।

About to be sent.

PERIPHRASTIC.

725 XID4 1

755.7.51

He who is or was sent.

मार्टि स्थामन्।

ব5८:ब्रु:दे।

He who will be sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used:-

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

न5८ है।	Being sent, having been sent.	
45C.481	Because, since, whenwas or were sent.	
75E.4x1	)	
15C.1.UN	$\left. \left. \left.  ight.  ight.  ight.  ight.  ight.$	
75C4	If, when, thoughwas or were sent.	
קקביקיתן		
קקביקבין	As, since, becausewas or were sent; having been sent.	
קקבים יאצון		
<b>बह्म</b> का ।	Because, thoughwas or were sent.	

#### SUPINES.

नार्हेट मुं।
नार्हे मुं।
नार्हे मुं।
नार्हे मुं।
नार्हे मुंहे हें हें हैं।
नार्हे मुंहे हें हें हैं।
For being sent.

# VERBAL NOUNS.

य5द:य:दे। य5द:य:पेद:य:दे। यॉर्नेद:कुंदे। यार्नेद:कुंदे।

The being sent.

The having been sent.

The being about to be sent.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

मिर्हिट कुं 'भेड स । मिर्हिट कुं 'भेड स । मिर्हिट कुं 'भेड स । मिर्हिट कुं 'भेड स ।

To be sent.

The same or :—

मार्ट्र म् जिल्हा स्वार्थित स्वार्य स्वार्थित स्वार्य स्वार्य स्वार्थित स्वार्य स्वार्य स्वार्य स्वार्थित स्वार्थित स्वार्थित स्वार्य स्वार

To be about to be sent.

IX.—Active, one-rooted Colloquial Verb अन्ति । To see.

# Root throughout ATT

N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE, except where otherwise indicated.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I see.

अर्थेट | f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am seeing.

शर्शेट मी भेर

अर्थेर-मी-भेर्र or ५५म।

अर्बेर-नी-ल्र्र or पर्म or ल्र्रम्

Past: I saw.

सर्वेट मुद \* or सर्वेट सेंट | f. a. p.

\* N.B.—35° for first person, 359° for the others.

Or:--

श्रव्टायाध्य

মর্থিনের বৃদ্য or occ. বিশ্ব or rarely, chiefly interr. শ্বিধ্। মর্থিনের বিশ্ব ,, শ্বিধ্

Imperfect: I was seeing.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have seen.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had seen.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

মর্থ্রহার্থার and so on.

Future: I shall see.

सर्बेट स्ट्रिट | f. a. p.

Or :--

अर्शेट मी भेरा and so on.

Note also the following:-

সাইট্রিউবি I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

Also:

মর্মিমেমির। I am (or have) to see.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If.. I shall see.

(Present Root) ত্রান্ত্র সূত্র মান্ত্র and so on.

Or :-

Past: If .. I would see.

(Perfect Root) ··· የ የተምር ነውር ነ f. a. p.

Or:-

(Perfect Root) তেওঁ সামূদ্দির মান্ত্র and so on.

Perfect: If.. I would have seen.

(Perfect Root) ত্র স্থান্থ সূত্র বিশ্ব মান্ত and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) শ্বামার্থিন বিশ্বন্ধা f. a. p.

#### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Similar to construction in 7557 To send, No. VI.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall see: I may see.

Same as in AFTA | To send, No. VI.

Past: Perhaps I would see: I might see.

सर्वेदःयःभेदःयः त्र [ f. a. p.

Or :--

মার্থিমে মার্বির্ম্য f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्ठमा नुदेन का अर्थेट स्ट्रा f. a. p.

Or :--

मिरुमा नुदेन अर्थेट मार्थे f. a. p.

Or :--

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have seen.

सर्वेदःयः व्याद्ध f. a. p.

Or :--

सर्वेद व स्पेर् द्रों । f. a. p.

Or :—

महिमा नुदेन अर्शेट म स्प्रित | and so on.

#### HORTATIVE.

Present: I ought to see: I must see.

মেমের্মির্স্মিন্স্মিন্স্মির্ and so on.

Or :--

द्रात्मार्श्वदः द्रमाराणु ध्येत्। and so on.

Or :-

... त्यासर्वेट. देवीश खटा f. a. p.

Or:-

शर्वट.मैं.लूब।

I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

Or :--

मर्बेट.ल.रूरी

I am (or have) to see.

And so, f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have seen; must have seen.

दःत्यसंबद्धःदाध्येत्। and so on.

Or:-

...पार्श्वर द्रोश दुर। f. a. p. But see note re दुर on p. 354.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might see.

सर्वेदःयदे देवा f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

প্র্তু (ब्रिम्।

See.

श्रश्रह्मः (क्ष्म)।

Do not see.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

श्रवट.चरीचा. (कुचा)।

Let me, etc. see.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to see; I may see.

মার্ম কিনা। f. a. p. and tenses.

Or:--

মর্থিন র্মানা অব | and so on.

And so on, conjugating ক্র্যাম regularly.

The following is more Bookish:— सर्वेद प्रशास्त्री f. a. p.

## OPTATIVE MOOD.

**Present** and **Past**: Oh that I were seeing, or had seen.

#### PARTICIPLES.

Present:

মর্থীন'ব।

Seeing.

Perfect: মর্নি'ন।

Com. Perfect : ฟรัติ ซาฟร ซา Having seen.

Future:

পর্ঠ: দ্রী।

About to see.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

सर्वेट सम्बर (रे)। He who sees or saw. The seer. মর্থইন্ম (ই)। পর্যুट.ফ্রি.ट्री  $He\ who\ will\ see.$  The seer. अर्वेट आमन (रे)।

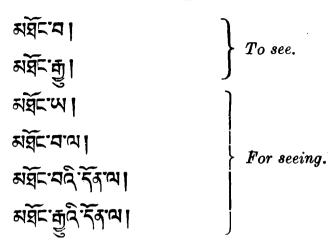
See also the other examples under this head in  $\widetilde{\eta 5}$ :  $\overline{7}$  | To send, No. VI.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

श्रवट.है।	Seeing.	
প্রুट.ঘগ।	Seeing; because, since, when, whileam, is, or are seeing.	
মর্থুই:ম'ম।	Seeing; at, for, thougham, is, or are seeing.	
মর্ব্র-মামধা		
শর্টু নে মে	As, sinceam, is or are seeing.	
सर्वेट:प्र।	)	
মর্থিত মর্থিত ম	Whilst seeing.	
अर्वेट मेश।	Though seeing.	
মর্ই <b>েব।</b>	If, when, thougham, is or are seeing.	
Past		
মর্থ্র-প্রা	)	
মর্টু: বুম। মর্টু: বুম।	$\left. iggr\}$ Having seen.	
_	Having seen.  Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.	
भक्रूट.चैट.को। भक्रूट.चैट.को।	Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.	
अब्रूट.च <u>ै</u> ट.कुं।	Seen; because, since, whenwas	
भड्ट-वैट-क्षा भड्ट-वैट-क्षा भड्ट-वैट-क्षा	Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.	
প্রত্র: বীদ্রেশন। মর্মুদ্র: বীদ্রেশ। মর্মুদ্র: বীদ্রেশ। মর্মুদ্র: বীদ্রেশ।	Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were	
भक्ट.चैट.च। भक्ट.चैट.चना भक्ट.चैट.चन। भक्ट.चैट.चन।	Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were seen.  Because, thoughwas or were	
सर्वट.चैट.चुरा। सर्वट.चैट.चा सर्वट.चैट.चरा। सर्वट.चैट.चरा। सर्वट.चैट.चरा।	Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were seen.  Because, thoughwas or were	

#### SUPINES.



VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : মর্ম্মা

To see.

Perfect : མགོང་བྱང་བ།

To have seen.

**Future** : মর্ন্ন ক্রম্ম

To be about to see; To be seen.

X.—Neuter, One-Rooted Colloquial Verb 주피유기 To be glad, To rejoice.

# Root ५११८। throughout.

Conjugated throughout like Colloquial মাইনে To see, save that in the forms in আইনে and অধ্যা the auxiliary particle is আ instead of লী, while the Imperative is ব্লামেলিয়া (উলা) or ব্লামেলিয়া কিলা, or the Literary লাব্যামেলিয়া Rejoice, Be glad.

The construction throughout is in the Nominative, save that in the Hortative Mood it is in the Dative with A, as in AACA! To see, No. IX.

XI.—Neuter, One-Rooted LITERARY Verb 5737 To be glad, To rejoice.

# Root 573 throughout.

N.B.—The construction is in the Nominative case, except where otherwise indicated. The STATI is omitted.

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am glad: I rejoice.

**रमाद**। f. a. p.

Or, intensively:—

नित्रम् राम्या f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am rejoicing.

न्वाद च अर।

नम्प्रतार्थेर or तर्मा।

नम्परमञ्जून or पर्नेची or लूरेनार्ट्री

Or :—

रमाद भे भेंद्र and so on; or रमाद में भेंद्र। and so on.

Or :-

न्माद य भेद।

বৃদ্ধান্ত or occ. chiefly interr. ত্রী

বনাব ব স্থিব।

Or :--

বৃদ্ধ শীন্ত and so on.

Or, seldom used now:--

न्मदःचलेदः (or लेटः) सकैश।

र्मात्र मिल्र (or लेट) मार्त्र।

निप्तः प्रवेदः (or विदः) स्रकेशः or मन्दः or स्रकेशःराःस्रेदः।

Past: I rejoiced: I was glad.

**रमाद** शेंद्र | f. a. p.

Or :--

**५**माद पर मुरे हें। f. a. p.

Or :--

বৃদ্ধান্থ বিষ্ণু বিষ্ণু বিষ্ণু and so on.

Imperfect: I was rejoicing.

Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

Perfect: I have rejoiced.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had rejoiced.

नित्रावर मुराने । f. a. p.

Or, though not common: -

र्पाद कर बुक्ष भेरि | and so on.

Future: I shall rejoice: I shall be glad.

5माद : ऑद । f. a. p.

Or:—

र्नाय पर त्युर। f. a. p.

Or :--

र्नाद कुं भेर । I am (or have) to rejoice.

And so on.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If .. I shall rejoice.

(Present Root) ত্র্বিস্থান্ত f. a. p.

Or:-

(Present Root) " 577775] f. a. p.

Or:

(Present Root) ত্রত্তি ব্যাহিন f. a. p.

Past: If .. I would rejoice.

(Perfect Root) তের ত্রার্থ বিষ্ট্র and so on.

(Perfect Root) ত্রান্থ্র ব্যান্থ্র বিষ্ণু ব

Perfect: If.. I would have rejoiced.

(Perfect Root) ত্রান্থ্র ব্যান্থ্র and so on.

# POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can rejoice or be glad.

रमाद प्राच f. a. p.

Or :-

दमाद पर दुरा f. a. p.

Or :--

दमाद प्रुव भेंदा। f. a. p.

Past: I could rejoice.

Same as Present.

Or :--

'ব্লাব'বহ'বুষ'ম'খিব। and so on.

Or :-

न्माद प्रवासाधित। and so on.

Or :--

द्याद सूच र्शेट । f. a. p.

Or :--

न्मात प्रस्तुका क्षेटा। f. a. p.

Perfect: I could have rejoiced.

रमाद प्रवास भेरा and so on.

Or:

বৃদ্ধ বহ'বুঝ'ঘ'ঊব। and so on.

Or:

नमात्र श्रुवादा त्रुमा f. a. p.

Or :---

न्नाद नर नुसाय दुना। f. a. p.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall rejoice: I may rejoice.

श्च.पुरा... र्वाद.वर**.परी**र ।

Or :-

श्च.पुरु।...**२न(२**.५**२.५)।** 

Or :-

शुःनेशः .. दमादः स्पटः।

Or :--

नम्यः यरः श्रीन्।

Or :=

ব্দাব-শ্বীব।

f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would or might rejoice.
ব্যাহান্ত্র বা আবা so on.

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have rejoiced.

বৃদ্যুত্ব স্থাত্য and so on.

#### HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to rejoice; I must rejoice.

''य'द्वाद'चर'द्वेहिं। f. a. p.

Or :--

5메지'지지'를 f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have rejoiced.

শ্বেদ্দার্বেহ দ্বাহিদ্দার and so on.

# PURPOSIVE.

Present: In order that I may rejoice.

Past: In order that I might rejoice. Same as first three forms of Present.

Or:— 독제국: 대조·펜조·대조·즉즉 [ f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. rejoice.

र्वाद.चर.कृता।	)	
Or :	{	f. a. p.
न्नाय. इ.क्ना	)	
Or :—	)	
र्वाद वर विदः।		
Or :—	; ;	
र्वाय.२.मोबट.।	}	f. a. p.
Or :—		
रवाद यर गुर हेम।	}	

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to rejoice; I may rejoice.

অব্দান্ত্ৰা f. a. p.

Past: I was allowed to rejoice; I might rejoice.

েমনুনাম্বামান্ত্রী মান্ত্রী and so on.

# OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were glad or rejoicing.

 주제ス·경·경·정·조·
 f. a. p

 주제ス·경조·경조·경조·
 f. a. p

 주제ス·경조·경조·경조·
 f. a. p

IMPERATIVE.

र्याद यर मुर विमा

Or :—

5月月·日子·日 1

Or:-

... प्र.र्वाद.चर.र्वेश।

Rejoice, Be glad.

सरमाद।

Or :--

रमाय पर साय गुरु लिया।

Ór :—

र्नार.चर.भु.वै।

Or:

... प्रत्विद्यः यरः श्रीत्वेशि

Do not rejoice. Be not glad.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: 5ARA Rejoicing.

Com. Perfect: รุๆฉ.ชัร.จ.พ์สุรา | Having rejoiced.

इनादः वरः नाज्ञश्रः व।
About to rejoice.

Future:

८मादःमुः ध्येषःय।

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

रमाद सामद।

दमाद व भेर सामक ।

रमात न प्रेर्प

<u>रमात्रः करः स्राम्ब</u>ा

नुमादःयः ॲर्यःयः विद्यारे।

He who rejoices or is glad. The rejoicer.

He who rejoiced, or was glad.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

Same as in ANT To see, No. IX.

#### Past.

Same as in AFT To see, No. IX, substituting & for 55, and &T taking 5 instead of \$

VERBAL NOUN OR ADJECTIVE.

रमादःयः (क्रे)। दमाय कराय (के)। दमादायरायाया (वे)।

Rejoicing; A, or the rejoicing.

The having rejoiced

The being about to rejoice.

SUPINES.

5412.77 |
Or:—

To rejoice or be glad.

5412.73 |

For rejoicing.

#### Infinitive Mood.

Present: 「지지기 To rejoice or be glad.

Past:

「지지 최자지 기 To have rejoiced or been glad.

「지지 조자지 기 To have rejoiced or been glad.

「지지 조자지 기 To be about to rejoice or be glad.

「지지 지지 기 기 To be about to rejoice or be glad.

XII.—Passive 4-Rooted, LITERARY Verb निर्देशिय जिल्ला का निर्देशिय कि कि Sent.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Objective of Dative case in A!

Otherwise it is the same as the Active Literary Verb निर्दार To send, No. VII. as far as and including the Potential Mood.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.

वर्दा (or मोर्डिट) वर र्जेम्स f. a. p.

Or :--

मिहिट निराम् f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

यहर (or महिंद) यर ह्योंशराध्येत्। and so on.

Then it is again similar to Verb No. VII. as far as and including the Optative Mood.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

# PARTICIPLES.

	PARTIOIPLES.	
Present :	महिंद्रम् ।	Being sent.
	ロ5c.jd.ci   ロ5c.jd.ci	Been sent.
Com. Perfect:	ব5८:वर्ष्ययः ব5८:कॅरःवर्ष्ययः ব5८:बेदःयःभेदःय।	Having been sent.
Future :	महिंद्र मुं। महिंद्र मुं प्येष या। महिंद्र मुं प्येष या। महिंद्र मुं प्येष या।	About to be sent.

# PERIPHRASTIC.

He who or that which is or was sent.

Rom. viii. 36. वॉर्न्ट्रियर मुच (दे or के)। बॉर्न्ट्रिय (दे or के)।

Matt. xi. 14. मिर्नेट कुं फीक् यः (ने or के)।

He who or that which, will be, or is to be sent.

# PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS

Same as in Colloquial Passive Verb  $95^{\circ}$  To be sent, No. VIII.

#### SUPINES.

महिंद्यकः।

To be sent.

For being sent.

# VERBAL Nouns.

महिंद्रं मुं प्येष्ट्रं या है। महिंद्रं मुं प्येष्ट्रं या है। महिंद्रं मुं प्येष्ट्रं या है।

The being about to be sent.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

XIII.—Active, 2-Rooted Colloquial Verb (377) To go

Roots.

Present: ৭শু।

Perfect: No Bal

Future: 9

Imperative:

{ বিশ' or মুদ্দা or মুদা। } With Particle

কিনা or মুদা। } when appropriate.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

ব্<u>ন্</u> f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

द्रभू मी भर

त्र्नो मी प्रेंन or त्रुमा

दर्ने में भेर or दर्मा or भेर यरेर।

Past: I went.

राष्ट्र' or चुन्। f. a. p.

Or:-

श्राट.च.लुब।

ইনিমের্দা or occ. ইচ্ or rarely, chiefly interr. ঋবা

र्शेट व रेन् ,, वर्ना ,, धेव।

Or:--

প্রবাদীর | and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

মান্ধেম্ম্বা and so on.

Or :-

মুব্ৰম'আঁব। and so on.

Future: I shall go.

مِعَ كَالَا f. a. p.

Or :-

वर्गेभिः भेद। and so on.

0r:--

··· भारत्में भारत्। I am (or have) to go.

f. a. p.

Or :—

ন্ না কু খেব। and so on. I am (or have) to go.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If ... I shall go.

(Present Root) "ব্ ব্ৰেম্মিন্ f. a. p.

Or:--

(Present Root) ত্র্ম্ম্ম্ম্র। and so on.

Past: If ... I would go.

(Perfect Root)...Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

Or :—

(Perfect Root) ''즉' 전다고' (or 결국고') 씨러 and so on.

Perfect: If...I would have gone.

(Perfect Root) তে ক্রিমি (or ফ্রিমি) ইমিমি and so on.
Or:—

(Perfect Root) ''즉' 'ॲ도' (or 결국') ॲ독! f. a. p. Or :—

(Perfect Root) प्राप्त (or भ्रेंद्र) प्रमा f. a. p.

#### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can go.

ন্<u>ন্</u> বুব। f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्ने विकास । f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्ने व्याणे भेरी and so on.

Past: I could go.

ন্<u>ন্</u> পূব শেখীৰ। and so on.

Perfect: I could have gone.

दर्ने द्वारा भेरा and so on.

Or :--

दर्ने शुक्यतर्ना f. a. p.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.
দাইনান্ত্ৰিক নি নি ম. p.

मारुपा नुदे अ .. दे में पी 'भेड़ | and so on.

दर्नो में प्रदाय दा f. a. p.

दर्ने में भेद दर्ने f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I might go.

শাতিশা দ্রীবারণ প্রাপ্ত or ইনিমে ) শীবা and so on.

मुक्तित. (or श्राट्सा ) लुक्साय रा धि a. b.

धुेद'य' (or र्सेट'य') धेद'दर्ने । f. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I might have gone.

দাউদা' দ্রীব'ব' ( or র্মান'ন') মৌর। and so on.

ষ্ট্রীধ্বম (or প্রামিন) প্রামিন্থ বিদ্ধানি a. p.

प्रेक्टा (or श्रेंट् प) स्पेर् प्रेन्नी। f. a. p.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to go; I must go.

द्रों द्रें श f. a. p.

Or :— এন্-্রন্থ'ন্ট্'ম্ব। and so on.

Or :— दर्नो दर्ने अप्ता f. a. p.

Or vulgarly:—
ব্লুব্লিন্স্বা and so on.

Or:— 식계·독취·ᄣ다 f. a. p.

Or:— व्यॉ-र्गेनिःभेदा and so on.

Past: I ought to have gone.

त्र्नार्म्स्यः (or vulgarly द्र्नानः) ध्रेद्र। and so on.

Or:-

র্নু'ব্র্ম'রুম'। f. a. p. But see note re রুম', p. 354.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that, or so that, I may go.

वर्गे नित्र दे दे त्या f. a. p.

Past: In order that, or so that, I might go.

ধ্রীর'মনি' (or র্মামেনি') ব্রি'ম। f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

হাব্দা (Pronounced Mān-do) Do not go.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

वर्षे] चरुषा (रुषा)।

Let me, etc. go.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to go: I may go.

द्र्यों किया f. a. p.

Or :--

वर्गे केंग में भेर। and so on.

(N.B.—Other Tenses may be formed by conjugating FIT) regularly.)

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that, or would that, I were going.

ा प्रमुख्यायाख। От:-वर्षेत्रस्त्रिम्। Past: Oh that, or would that, I had gone.

(N.B.—The expressions in  $\sqrt{7}$ ) are not much used in Colloquial, being rather Literary.)

## PARTICIPLES.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial Verb হাইনি To see, No. IX, এল taking হু, ইনি taking হু, and হুক taking হি If ইনিম be used it would take হি

#### SUPINES.

# VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

# INFINITIVE MOOD.

Future: ৭ ব্ৰুজ্খন্ম।

To be about to go.

XIV.—Active 2-Rooted LITERARY Verb ATT To go.

Roots.

Same as in Colloquial Verb, No. XIII, omitting

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

द्र्मेद्रिं f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

वर्गे में भें ५ दें।

त्र्यो मे र्थेर रें or त्रुम में।

दर्मोमिल्पर रें or दर्ममें or ल्रामेर रहे

Or :---

त्र्नेप्पर्दे। and so on.

Past: I went.

र्सेट र युवर्ते। f. a. p.

Or :---

धुक्राट दें। f. a. p.

Or :-

श्राट प्राधिव दे।

ইনিমন্দ্ৰানী or occ., chiefly interr. খীবাৰী

श्रॅट न भेद दें।

Or :--

दीक्य धेक्कें। and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :--

र्सेट्न (or धुक्ना) भक्ति । and so on.

Or :--

श्रीद बिद (or देव बिद ) अर् या भेद दें। and so on.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

মিন (or ধ্ৰীৰ) ব্যাথি দিব and so on.

Or:

र्सेट (or धुन) स्प्रिन्ति f. a. p.

Future: I shall go.

त्र्यो वरत्युर रें। f. a. p.

दर्नो पर नुदे । f. a. p.

Or :-

दिनों अंदः दें। f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall go.

(Present Root) ... (any simple Future).

Past: If... I would go.

(Perfect Root) তে মান্তে (or ফ্রিন্ম) মান্ত্র and so on..

Or, same as Present.

Perfect: If... I would have gone.

(Perfect Root) " ፞ጞ፟ጜጜ (or ጟ፝፞፞፞፞ጜጜ) ፞ቚ፟ጚጟ፝ and so on.

# POTENTIAL MOOD.

Same as Potential Mood in Literary 7557 To send, No. VII using Root 37 throughout.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.

शुन्ध। ... (simple Future).

Or:-

ዓቭ ዓጙ ጷናኝ | f. a. p.

Or:--

दम् रें रें रें f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would go; I might go.

বর্নী শ্বিমানী and so on.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have gone; I might have gone. বিশ্বী মৃথি মুণ্ডিৰ and so on.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Similar to Literary 7557 | To send, No. VII.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Similar to Literary  $\sqrt{5} \subset \sqrt{5} \subset \sqrt{5}$  To send, No. VII, using Root  $\sqrt{5} \subset \sqrt{5}$  in Past Tense.

PRECATIVE MOCD.

 Or: ()

 Or: ()

 Or: ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

 ()
 ()

PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOOD.

As in Literary  $\sqrt{55.7}$  | To send, No. VII, keeping the construction in the Nominative case and using the appropriate roots.

IMPERATIVE.

 최고 주 주 ()
 Image: I

PARTICIPLES.

दर्गेंग्य। Present: Going. श्रूट.च. वर होयत। Perfect: श्रेट. (or त्रेच.) क्र.च। Gone. श्रूट. (or त्रुथ.) त्रुथ.त। श्राह्म (or द्वेबरा) लुबरा। Com. Perfect: र्शेट. (or क्रेक्.) क्र. याल्या Having gone. र्सर. ( or द्वेष ) चुब.य.लुब.य। वर्गे वर वर्गर व। वर्गे.वर.वे.व। Future: About to go. वर्गें छ। वर्गेग्।

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC OR SUBSTANTIVE.

Same as in Colloquial No. XIII, save for the following:-

त्र्ने म्यान्त्रा त्र्ने मुःश्वेद्यादे। त्र्ने मुःश्वेद्यादे। त्र्ने मुःश्वेद्यादे। त्र्ने मुःश्वेद्यादे। त्र्ने स्वाम्ब

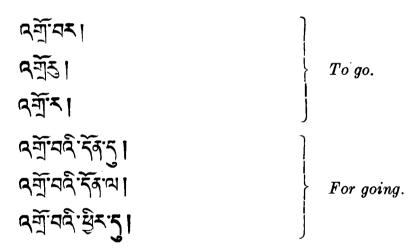
He who or that which will go, or is to go.

# PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Same as in Colloquial No. XIII.

#### VERBAL NOUNS.

#### SUPINES.



# INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present:	द्रम् द्रा	$To \ go.$
Perfect :	श्रद्धाः or क्षेत्रय।	
	র্মিন (or দ্বীর) ক্রমান।	m 1
	श्रट. (or द्वेष) हुन.य।	To have gone.
	श्र्राटाया (or क्रिक्सा) स्रोक्सा	

ধর্মু.বম.বীব। ধর্মু.বম.ধ**রী**ম.ব।

Future:

বূর্লীব**শ্বারশ্বা** 

**त्रों.कै.लुश्**ता

५मॅं.वै।

To be about to go.

XV.—Two-rooted LITERARY Verb 35.7 To become, To be changed, To be turned, To grow, etc.

N.B.—This verb is often used as an Auxiliary verb, and the way in, and extent to which, it is so employed, is best seen in the other Literary Conjugations. It is purely classical.

The construction here is in the NOMINATIVE case.

ROOTS.

Present: ৭নুম। Perfect: নুম। Future: ৭নুম।

Imperative: মুম্ but sometimes ব্ৰা

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I become.

द्युर:रें। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am becoming.

৭ বুং শূৰ শৈৰ বি

त्मुरणीय स्पर्ने or तर्मामी।

व्युरणीक्रिंदर्रे व वरुमामि व स्रिन्यरेर्

Past: I became.

गुर or गुर हैं। f. a. p.

मैर.च.लुब.ब्री

नुरः दादरुमार्मी or occ. chiefly interr. धेद दें।

मुर्याधिक व

Imperfect: I was becoming.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :--

মুসমানীৰ and so on.

Or :--

मुर-विद-भेर-धर्भिर-वें। and so on.

Perfect: I have become.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had become.

Same as Past.

Or, though seldom used:—

गुर दश र्थेर रें। f. a. p.

Or:--

गुर भेर दें। f. a. p.

Future: I shall become.

র্ন্যুর-মের-মুর-মি f. a. p.

त्मुर: वर: मुद्रे। f. a. p

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall become.

(Present Root) " (simple Future).

Past: If ... I would become.

(Perfect Root) TTTT f. a. p.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ত্র প্রাম্থর বা and so on.

Perfect: If... I would have become.

(Perfect Root) "ব্যাস্থ্য শুন্ম and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD, PROBABILITY, HORTATIVE MOOD.

(As in Literary Verb 57377 To be glad, No. XI.)

# PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: So that I may become.

Past: So that I might become.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOODS.

As in Literary 7557 To send, No. VII, keeping the construction in the Nominative Case, and using the appropriate Roots.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD.

# PARTICIPLES.

Tuture:

पुरःकुःभिदःय।

पुरःकुःभिदःय।

About to become.

पुरःकुःभिदःय।

Appr. सुःभिदःय।

Appr. सुःभिदःय।

Appr. सुःभिदःय।

PERIPHRASTIO EXPRESSIONS.

 त्रमुर.व. (ते. or वै।
 He who or that which becomes.

 त्रमुर.घावद. (ते. or वै)।
 He who or that which becomes.

 मुर.घ. (ते. or वै)।
 He who or that which became.

 मुर.घ. (ते. or वै)।
 He who or that which became.

 प्रमुर.घ. वि. or वै)।
 He who or that which is to, or will, become.

 प्रमुर.ची. वि. or वै)।
 He who or that which is to, or will, become.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in ANT To see, No. XI, using the appropriate Roots.

Both ANT and No. take 5 and No.

SUPINES.

ব্যুম্বম।
ব্যুম্ব্র।

To become.

ବଶ୍ଚିୟ ସହି :द्वेद द्वा ବଶ୍ଚିୟ ସହି :द्वेद खा ବଶ୍ଚିୟ ସହି :खेद द्वा

For becoming.

VERBAL NOUNS.

 अनुरक्षिः प्रवेश्वः

 अनुरक्षः प्रवेशः

 अनुरक्षः

 अनुरक्षः</t

Becoming. A or the becoming.

The having become.

The being about to become.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : ੨ਗੂ੨੶ਹ|

To become.

শূম:ম

Perfect : गुर.क्र.य।

ग्रीर.बुर.स।

गुर-य-लुब-य।

**प**र्वीर.घर.पर्वीर.घ।

Future: 🧸 শূর্ম সম্প্র

पर्नीर.घर.घो**चश**.रा ।

तं<mark>चीर म</mark>ै.लु**र**न।

To have become.

To be about to become.

XVI.—Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 35 To do, To make, etc.

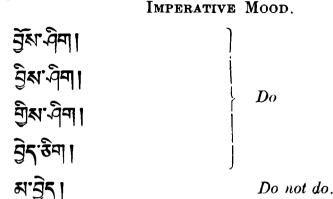
N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE case, save where otherwise indicated.

Roots.

Present: 35| Perfect: 58| Future: 5| Imperative:

वेंस. वेंद. वैस. मुंस।

The construction is throughout similar to that of Colloquial 755.7 To send, No. VI, up to and including the Optative Mood, save for the following:—



N.B.—The form 35 Do is probably really 55!

#### PARTICIPEES.

As in Colloquial निर्देश To send, No. VI.

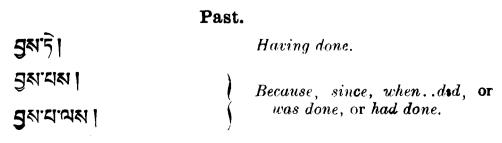
ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial 7557 To send No. VI.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.



And so on, as in Colloquial AFT To send, No. VI.



And so on, as in Colloquial AFR'S To send, No. VI.

SUPINES, AND VERBAL NOUNS AND INFINITIVE MOOD.

As in Colloquial AFE'A' To send, No. VI.

XVII.—Active, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb, 35.4. To do, To make, etc.

Roots.

Present:

Perfect: As in Ac

As in Active Colloquial Verb, No. XVI.

Future:

Imperative : টুম (প্ৰা)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I do; I make.

353 f. a. p.

Intensive: I do do; I do make.

ਸ਼੍ਰੇਤ:ਬ੍ਰਤ:ਤ੍ਰੇਤ:ਤ੍ਰੀ f. a. p.

Periphrastic: 1 am making.

ब्रेन्गीन व्यान दि।

वेरण्डस्पररें ज तर्मामा

त्रेन गुन्यों र पेर पर वर्तमानी का विद्यारेन हैं।

Or, elegantly, but seldom used:-

नेद्रक्ष्टामञ्जा

विदःरेदःमद्दे।

नुद्-रहेट:अर्डस-स्. or निर्दे or अर्डस-ताम्बर्-रे ।

Past: I made.

5্ৰ মূ f. a. p.

Or :-

च्यायाध्यक्षा

নুষ'ম'ন্দু না না or occ., chiefly interr. धेक्रें।

नुषायाधिक है।

Or:-5 N N T T | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was making.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or:--

5रायभेद दें। and so on.

Or :--

नेद्राणुदार्थेद्राध्यक्षदाद्वा and so on.

Or :-

5 श मिट सें र य भेद दें। and so on.

Perfect: I have made.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had made.

Same as Past.

Or :--

Or :--

Or, though seldom used :--

नुशादशार्थे र हैं। f. a. p.

Future: I shall make.

ਤੇ5'ਖ਼ਣ'ਤੁਨੇਂ | f. a. p.

Or:--

ਰੋਤ ਪਨ ਨਗੂਨ ਨੇ। f. a. p.

Or :-

35 WEE' | f. a. p.

Or :-

57 f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall make.

(Present Root)... (any simple Future as above).

The rest as in Literary निर्देश To send, No. VII.

The other Moods as in the same Verb No. VII, down to and including the Optative Mood, with appropriate Roots, etc.

# अविष्ठा <td

# PARTICIPLES.

Present:	<b>बे</b> रमा	Making.
	<u> বুশ্ব।</u>	}
Perfect:	5্রম:শ্ব্	Made.
	वेश.चुर्यता	}
Com. Perfect :	विश्वासक्त्रीयः ।	Having made.
<b>F</b> uture	त्रक्षुं भेदय। त्रेत्रकुं भेदय। त्रेत्रक्षुं भेदय। त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा त्रेत्रक्ष्यं भवा	About to make.

## ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLES.

র্নির্দির।

র্নির্দির।

র্নির্দির।

র্নির্দির।

র্নির্দির।

রামানর।

রামানর

রাম

Or the following simple construction may be used:-

युना क्षमः नुद्राद्यदे द्वा सर्ह्दा यानासः दे।

युना क्षमः नुद्राद्यदे द्वा सर्ह्दा यानासः दे।

युना क्षमः नुद्राद्यदे द्वा सर्ह्दा यानासः दे।

The carpenter who made the box.

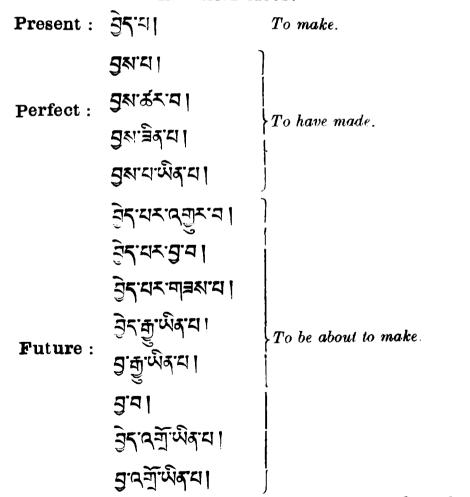
The carpenter who will make, or is to make, the box.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial 3571 | To make, No. XVI.

# VERBAL NOUNS.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.



XVIII.—Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 카페 다 or 지하다 To be made, To be done, etc.

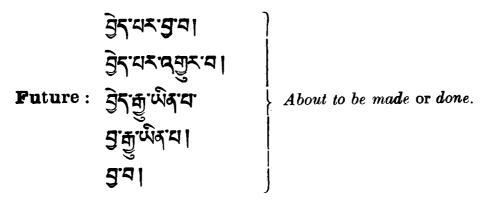
Conjugated on the lines of Passive Colloquial Verb 75. ]

To be sent, No. VIII, with the appropriate Roots, etc.

XIX.—Passive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 57 To be made, To be done, etc.

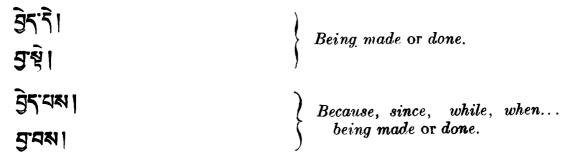
Conjugated on the lines of Passive LITERARY Verb 755757 To be sent, No. XII, as far as, and including, the Compound Perfect of the Participles, and with the appropriate Roots, etc. Then:—

## PARTICIPLES.



OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

## Present.



And so on as in LITERARY ACTIVE, No. XVII.

## Past.

[ Having been made or done.

[ Because, since, when . . . is or was made or done.

And so on as in LITERARY ACTIVE, No. XVII.

#### SUPINES.

7.77 531 नेर'यर। 3551 प्रवित्ति (or देवाया or द्वेरात्)। JA'Fa'5' (or Fa'A' or Bx'5)| For being made or done. नेद्रायदे देवर् (or देवराय or क्षेत्रर् )।

To be made or done.

VERBAL NOUN.

प्रयः (वै)।

Being made or done. A or the being made or done.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

571

चे.की.लुब्स।

Future: 35 मु Wara

वुर्यरत्वीरःग।

नेर्यरम्

Past:

नुस्यरम्भेद्रय।

To be made or done.

To have been made or done.

XX.—Passive LITERARY Verb 35.45.45.7 To be made or done, etc.

In conjugating this Verb, 55.4x remains constant throughout, while the rest is in LITERARY W5.4. To be, No. II.

Or, while keeping 55.45 constant throughout, Literary 35.5 No. XV may be substituted for Literary 35.41

But then the meaning is,—To become made or done, To be about to become made or done.

FINIS.

# ERRATA ET CORRIGENDA.

Page	4, li	ne l	. at	bottom.	For	<b>?</b>	read	<b>=</b>
,,	8, ,	, 5	from	,,	,,	L.	,,	73
"	9, ,, 12, ,,	, 6	,,	top.	"	i in col. 2 "affected"	,, ,,	ī. "effected."
,,	12, , 14, ,			bottom. top.	,,	"affected"  Yata	,,	"effected."  Yatā.
,,	18,	•	• • •	bottom.	,,	LEN-PA	"	LÈN-PA.
,,	19, ,			,,	,,	Сно	٠,,	Ch'o.
,,	21, ,	, 1	at	top.	,,	মন্	,,	ম্ব
,,	21, ,	, 2	2 from	,,	,,	Heda	,,	Head.
,,	22, ,	, 7	7 ,,	bottom.	,,	ध.	,,	સ
,,	22, ,	, 6	,,	,,	,,	ĎA	,,	Ďa.
,,	23,	, 11	<u>,,</u>	,,	, <b>,</b>	Ğев	,,	ĞĒв.
,,	25, ,	, 7	7,,	top.	,,	Ğ'Ā	,,	Ğ'Ā.
,,	27, ,	, 8	,,	bottom.	,,	Ž	,,	Ž.
,,	27, ,	, 7	,,	,,	,,	ditto.		
,,	28, ,	, 4	ļ,,	,,	,,	Вав	,,	В́ав́.
,,	31, ,	, 6	,,	top.	,,	m	,,	n.
,,	31, ,	, 4	· ,,	bottom.	,,	Bar	,,	Bar, and
,,	33, ,	, 3	,,	top.	,,	Ba Žhyu Žhyum	,,	В́а. Žнуυ, and Žнуим.
,,	35,	, 6	,,	bottom.	,,	<u>.</u> .	,,	Ŋ
**	48, ,	, 8	5 ,,	,,	,,	"lines loping"	"	"line slop- ing."
"	49, ,	, 9	,,	top.	,,	ત્ય	,,	23
,,	<b>49</b> ,	,, 1	4 ,,	,,	,,	" up "	,,	" at."
,,	<b>56</b> , ,	,, :	3 ,,	,,	,,	तंर	• :	<b>a</b>
,,	68,	, ]	l at	,,	,,	Ś	,,	<b>ć</b> .

For ZHYI read ZHYL Page 89, line 10 from bottom. ditto. 89, ,, 3 ,, ,, ditto. 89, ,, 4 top ,, ditto 89, ,, 5 in both places ,, 91, ,, 3 ZHYI' read Zhyi'. ,, 4 Zhyi' ŹĦYI'. 91, ,, 4 Zhyić Źhyić. 91, ,, ,, .. 5 .کار 106, , 11 ,, 139, last line. **ビ.メビ. ビ.**ヹヹ. ĬĨ. 140, line 12 from bottom. गारी: 151, ,, 12 ,, 153, , 10 Delete on between 5 and Ex. ,, 169, ,, 1  $\mathbf{at}$ hath read that. top 243, ,, 10 from मार्ट्राय bottom. ₹. 2 ,, 262, ,, top. ,, दर्गीयदे 306, ,, bottom. 6 श्रेद. श्रद. 329, ,, 3 ٠, 347, last line. Delete second and third dot between 555 and আমৰ ! Read "might be sent." 351, line 11 from bottom. Delete "विना or निना or रेन।" 371, ,, 11 and re-insert after "Particle" on next previous line. For श्रे.चेर. read প্রবিদ্র top. 381, ,, 5 ,, दमार bottom. 382, ,, 10 ,, 5 and for 386, ,, 8 ,,

# CORRIGENDA—(continued).

Page 66 (middle of page).

Delete the words "some uncertainty," and substitute the words "personal knowledge and is certain."

Also delete the word "almost."

Also delete the words "at all," and substitute the word "exactly."

Also delete the words "only hazarding the statement," and substitute the words "speaking on information."

Page 207 (bottom of page).

Delete the words "an emphatic or positive statement is intended," and substitute the words "the speaker expresses knowledge derived from information."

After the words "No there is not," insert the words "(so I am informed)."

Then add the following:-

"A571 is used when the speaker expresses personal knowledge and certainty. Thus:—

মন্ধ। মন্ব্ৰ No, there is not (I know). (See also p. 66)."